



This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

### Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

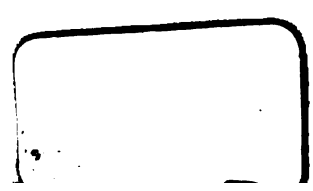
We also ask that you:

- + *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
- + *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
- + *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
- + *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

### About Google Book Search

Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at <http://books.google.com/>

1











10







QUEEN

ELIZABETH

*Second Daughter  
Bulloine his 2<sup>d</sup> Wife.  
1558. The 1<sup>st</sup> thing She  
Laws made by her  
Popery. She Died March 24. 1603. having Reigned  
44 Years 4 Months & was Buried at  
Westminster.*

*of Hen. 8.<sup>th</sup> by Ann  
was Crowned Janu<sup>y</sup> 15.  
did was repealing all  
Sister in favour of*

1  
*Robt* CURIALIA: *Pearn,*

OR  
AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT

OF  
SOME BRANCHES  
OF THE  
ROYAL HOUSEHOLD. &c. &c.

PART I.

CONSISTING OF  
TWO DISSERTATIONS:

ADDRESSED TO THE  
President of the Society of Antiquaries, London.

viz.

I. ON THE OBSOLETE OFFICE of the ESQUIRES of the  
KING's BODY.

II. ON THE ORIGINAL NATURE, DUTY, &c. of the  
GENTLEMEN of the KING's most Honourable PRIVY CHAMBER.

By SAMUEL PEGGE, ESQ.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed by J. NICHOLS; Printer to the SOCIETY of ANTIQUARIES;  
And sold by T. PAYNE and Son, Mews Gate; B. WHITE and Son,  
at Horace's Head, in Fleet-street; J. ROBSON, New Bond-street;  
and LEIGH and SOTHEBY, York-street, Covent Garden.

MDCCLXXXII.





TO  
THE KING,  
THE FOLLOWING WORK IS, BY ROYAL  
INDULGENCE, HUMBL Y INSCRIBED

BY  
HIS MAJESTY'S  
MOST FAITHFUL SUBJECT

AND  
DUTIFUL SERVANT

SAMUEL PEGGE,

*One of the GROOMS of His MAJESTY'S*

*Most Honourable*

PRIVY CHAMBER.

[ \* ]

To the PRESIDENT,  
VICE-PRESIDENTS, and FELLOWS  
of the Society of ANTIQUARIES, LONDON.

GENTLEMEN,

I **TOUGHT** amply to apologize for withdrawing the following Pieces from your Publications after the favourable Reception they have met with at your hands; and have only to urge, that I thought it more becoming my *Office*, as well as more respectful to the KING, who has vouchsafed to accept them, that they should appear as an independent Work.

I have not the Vanity to lay any Claim to publick Favour—and therefore only look to the very few who may be attached to such Subjects from Curiosity, Office, or Choice—

*Contentus paucis lectoribus—*

HOR.

though I confess to have had the Presumption to shelter myself under the Size and Type of your **ARCHAEOLOGIA**, with a modest Wish that these Papers may (by some at least) be considered as collateral Appendages to that learned and valuable Work.

B

As

[ \* ]

As I am not without Hopes of adding to this little Publication, as Opportunity and Documents may offer, I have styled it **PART THE FIRST**;—and after returning my Thanks to such Gentlemen of the Society, and to my Friends in general, who have hitherto assisted me with their Communications, I have the Honour to be,

**GENTLEMEN,**

Your obliged

And most obedient Servant,

**SAMUEL PEGGE.**

Whitehall,  
April 23, 1782.

[ 7 ]

C U R I A L I A:

OR,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

---

DISSERTATION I.

ON THE OBSOLETE OFFICE

of the

ESQUIRES of the KING'S BODY\*.

*To the President of the Society of Antiquaries, London.*

S I R,

**A**MONG the various subjects which attract the attention of your learned Society, those, I should imagine, cannot be unacceptable which relate to any ancient branch of the *household* of your *Royal* PATRON; and as several memoirs are found in the *ARCHAEOLOGIA*, consisting of matter of this kind, I beg leave through your favour, to offer, with deference, some account of the ancient and now obsolete office of THE ESQUIRES

\* Read at the Society of Antiquaries, May 20, 1779.

of the KING's BODY. As the subject is but just out of the reach of *viva voce* information, it may perhaps be thought scarce ripe enough for investigation; but I believe I may venture to assert that the *nature, duty, &c.* of these *officers* are as little known, as if they had been discontinued for ages, though they were in being at the beginning of the present century. I incline then to believe, Sir, that the ESQUIRES of the BODY were an appendage to the KING as being a KNIGHT; and as every knight had anciently *two* ESQUIRES attending him in an intimate degree, so the KING might very well be intitled at least to *four*, which was no more than was claimed by every PEER, while a *knight-bachelor* had but two \*. According to Mr. Camden, "One of the ESQUIRES carried the knight's *helmet*, the other his buckler, and were his inseparable companions, holding lands of him by *escuage* in the same manner as "the KNIGHT held of the king by *knight's-service*." These are Mr. Camden's words, and yet I cannot but think, though I am ashamed to dispute so high an authority, that he has been led into an error, and that the ESQUIRES bore the KNIGHT's *lance* and buckler, and not the *helmet* and buckler. I take my ground for this presumption from the appearance which the CHAMPION affords us on CORONATIONS (perhaps the only representation now to be had of a KNIGHT arm'd *cap à pié*) who

\* Prefatory Discourse to Camden's Britannia. Lord Audley had *four* ESQUIRES at the battle of Poitiers 1356, and his liberality to them for their services is on record, where he transfers to them the bounty which EDWARD the Black Prince had bestowed upon himself. [v. Echard's Hist. of Eng.] And Mr. Selden mentions an earl of Salisbury who had *four* ESQUIRES in the reign of king Richard II. [Tit. Hon. p. 834. edit. 1631.] Sir Henry Spelman likewise tells us in general terms that the *nobility* had anciently *four*, when *two* only were allowed to *knight-bachelors* [Proceres quatuor, equites aurati duos, [sc. armigeros] habuisse dicuntur]. Gloss. in voce *Armiger*.

### ESQUIRES of the King's Body.

9

is preceded by two ESQUIRES, one of whom bears his *lance* and the other his *shield* \*.

WE may add to this, that the very terms ARMIGER and SCUTIFER, which were their ancient proper titles, imply rather the bearing of the offensive and defensive weapons of the KNIGHT than any part of his *body armour*, and point directly at the *lance* and *shield*: and further it can easily be discerned that the offices of ARMIGER and SCUTIFER were formerly distinct from each other, with a manifest inferiority on the part of the SCUTIFER or *shield-bearer*; for, exclusive of what will appear hereafter in Chaucer's case, it is observable in Sandford's account of the coronation of King James II. (which was as full, accurate, and studiously complete as possible in all its branches) that of the champion's two ESQUIRES, the ARMIGER (or he who bore the lance) had the post of honour and went on the right hand of the other (the SCUTIFER) who carried the shield.

THE KNIGHT had likewise in his suite certain PAGES to be occasionally ready to do him service, who also appear in the ceremonial of the CHAMPION as depicted by Sandford, and the *helmet* when not worn by the KNIGHT might very properly be born by one of them. I speak of *Knights Bachelors*, and it is of them that Mr. Camden is speaking; for BARONS and the higher orders of nobility had four ESQUIRES, as we have seen, and in such case a third ESQUIRE might bear the *helmet*. But to proceed with the ESQUIRES in question. Though many ESQUIRES

\* See Ogleby's Coronation of king Charles II. and Sandford's Coronation of king James II. in both which we have drawings of this ceremonial. The heraldic account also says that of the *two* ESQUIRES attendant on the champion (who is generally supposed to be a knight), one was to bear the *lance* and the other the *shield*. [v. I. 7. in Off. Arm.] And further Mr. Du Fresne says, that those who carried the *arms* and the *shield* (*arma ac scuta*) of *knights* were called ARMIGERI and SCUTIFERI. [v. Gloss. in voce *Valettus*.]

might

might serve under the same KNIGHT, in proportion to his possessions, yet *two* seem only to have been of his *body*, had the especial care of his person, and were his companions in hours of privacy and retirement. Analogous to this, the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY will be found to have been very confidential officers, and anciently near the *Royal Person* both by day and night.

I WAS led into this piece of *chivalry* by a passage in *Shakespeare* who makes *Sir John Falstaff* PUN upon the word KNIGHT, "When thou art king," says Sir John to the prince of Wales, "let not us that are SQUIRES of the NIGHT's BODY be called *thieves of the DAY's beauty* \*." From this passage it is very clear that *Shakespeare* understood the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY to be an appurtenance to his KNIGHTHOOD. Upon the same idea the ESQUIRES on *Installations* of *Knights* of the *Bath* are preserved in like manner as they were formerly used when the *Knighthood* and *Investiture* were conferred *eodem instante*; Installation being a modern ceremony introduced upon the revival of the order (1725) in imitation of the *Order of the Garter*.

THE *Knight* of the *Bath* is attended at this day by three Gentlemen who go promiscuously, though erroneously, under the denomination of his ESQUIRES; but one of them should be understood to be a PAGE, whose office was to ride before the *Eques Designatus* after his *batbng*, to the court for the purpose of his being *dubbed* and *invested*, bearing the *sword*, pummel upwards, with the *spurs* hanging upon the *belt*, while the *two* ESQUIRES rode on each side of the intended KNIGHT. Mr. Selden likewise allows but *two* ESQUIRES to a *Knight* of the *Bath*, and they were antiently called ESQUIRES *governors* who

\* Hen. IV. Part I. act I. sc. 2.

### ESQUIRES of the King's BODY.

18.

were to instruct the KNIGHT in matters of *chivalry* &c. \*. This distinction is preserved in the *statutes* of the order as it now stands, and in ancient ceremonials (two of which are printed in Mr. *Anstis's* Observations on the order of the *Bath*), the two ESQUIRES only are mentioned without taking any notice of the PAGE. These ESQUIRES *Governors* were rewarded by the KNIGHT, (till within little more than a century) not by a specific sum of money, as others were who attended the ceremony, but by annuities during life preserving thereby a relique of *escuage* †. To return to the ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY. It appears from the household of king Edward IV. (called the *Liber Niger Domus Regis Angliæ*) that their denomination is relative; for there were at that time, both KNIGHTS and ESQUIRES of *household*, as they are there called, which last consisted at least of forty in number; and "out of these, or otherwise chosen, were *four* to be of the BODY ‡." What number our kings might retain in very ancient times, or in the field, is uncertain; but, from this period they did not in domestic life ordinarily exceed *four*, *two* of whom waited quarterly (Temp. Edw. IV.) though afterwards one only was upon actual duty at a time, except in processions, or on occasions of parade. Since the restoration indeed *supernumeraries* have been appointed without duty or salary, with a reversionary interest to succeed of course on vacancies, which was common

\* See the ancient manner of making Knights of the Bath in the late Mr. Anstis's Observations published 1725, extracted from the Coit. Library Nero c. ix. xi. fol. 168. [v. also Selden's Titles of Honour, ch. v. sect. 47.]

† MS. in Off. Arm. *Knights-Service* was abolished (and *Escuage* fell of course) by Statute anno 12 Car. II.

‡ We find however in a subsequent book of Ordinances in this reign that king Edward IV. had enlarged the number; for he had (A. D. 1478) *ten* KNIGHTS and *nine* ESQUIRES of his body, Bibl. Harl. N. 642.

in other branches of the household. In a printed account of the coronation of king Edward VI. they are called *keepers of the king's person* \*, which appellation may very well be justified by what will be offered presently.

HAVING thus brought the office within the limits of the household, I shall beg leave to proceed to the investigation of the duty of the *ESQUIRE in waiting* (as the court term is) from the KING's rising to his going to bed: after which time it will appear that the *ESQUIRE of the BODY* was the most confidential officer of all others that slept in the court. But I would first observe, that these officers, domestically speaking, seem to have been entirely *regal*; for Henry prince of Wales, eldest son of King James the First (large as his household establishment was) had no *ESQUIRE of his BODY*, although he was a Knight †.

THE *ESQUIRES of the BODY* then, Sir, were in the department of the Lord Chamberlain, their duty being, for the most part, in the rooms above stairs: they were Gentlemen of birth, or of good alliance, if not of fortune: and though *ESQUIRE* was the generical appellation, yet they were often *knights*, which last, when spoken of individually, were called *KNIGHTS of the BODY*.

IN some cases *one KNIGHT of the BODY* seems to have been equivalent to *two ESQUIRES*; for it is said in certain cases, that there must be "*two ESQUIRES or one KNIGHT*." Conformably with this I find, that when the KING kept his *estate* in the hall upon a principal *feast* (Temp. Hen. VII.) there sat with him a BISHOP and a DUKE, and for want of a DUKE *two* EARLS: and this commutation is confirmed by the ordinances of king Edward IV. (1478) above-cited, where in the article relating to the *counting-house* it is said "*two PAGES make answer to one*" "*GROOM, two GROOMS to one YEOMAN, and two YEOMEN to*

\* Mexia's Treasure of ancient and modern Learning.

† Bibl. Harl. N° 642, now printed in Dr. Birch's Life of Prince Henry.

"a GENTLEMAN \*," It is to be observed that these were then the progressive stages of official rank; as they are, in many cases, at this day. Apart from the enlargement of the number of Esquires mentioned, (p. 11.) let us revert to the establishment of the *four* which, we find, with some innovations had been the usual complement. In the *Liber Niger Domus Regis Angliæ* (Temp. Edw. IV.) it is said there shall be "ESQUIRES for the KING'S BODY *four*, noble of condition, whereof always " *two* be attendant on the king's person to array and unarray him, watch day and night, and to dress him in his cloaths; " and they be callers † to the *lord chamberlain* if any thing lack for his person or pleasure. Their business is in many " secrets, some sitting in the king's *chamber*, some in the *hall* " with persons of like service, which is called *knights service*. " Taking every of them for his livery at night" [a certain quantity of bread, wine, and ale, and in winter certain allowances of candles, wood, &c.] " and wages in the *counting-house*, " if he be present in court, daily *seven pence halfpenny*, and " *cloathing* with the household winter and summer, or else *forty* " *shillings*, besides his other fee of the jewel house, or of the " treasurer of England, and, besides his *watching-cloathing* of " *chamber* of the king's wardrobe. He hath abiding in this " court but *two* servants [and] livery sufficient for his horses in " the country by the *herberger* ‡." These ordinances do not limit the number of horses; but the statutes, made at Eltham anno 17 Hen. VIII. (1546), say that every *knight* belonging to the household, whether of the *body* or not, shall be allowed stabling for six horses, and every *esquire of the body* five horses. Anciently if an ESQUIRE of the BODY went abroad in the cha-

\* See Bibl. Harl. N° 642. p. 98.

† Retainers.

‡ Sc. Harbinger,

rafter of an ambassador, he had an escorte of horse allowed by the king, superior to other esquires, viz. *six*,—when a common esquire had, at the most, but *four*. A KNIGHT of the BODY had *ten*, and sometimes *fifteen* horses on like occasions; when a mere knight (not of the body, or at least not of the household) had in the proportion of *eight* to *ten*, or of *ten* to *fifteen* \*. The statutes of Eltham likewise allow every ESQUIRE of the BODY to retain *four* servants, *two* of whom were allowed to eat in the hall.

THIS book of ordinances of king Edward IV. then prescribes an outline of the offices to be performed by the ESQUIRE of the BODY upon duty; and orders, that “one of them “make [ready] the KING’s cupboard [at night], and not depart “from it till the KING had *drunken for All-night*,” which we may suppose was taking his leave in a grace-cup. The term seems to explain itself, but I shall presently give a full account of the ceremony. Antecedent to this (according to these ordinances) one of the KNIGHTS of the BODY, together with a GENTLEMAN USHER, was to supervise the making of the KING’s bed, and (according to the orders temp. Hen. VII.) to sprinkle it with holy water, and at a proper time to set the KING’s sword at the *bed’s head* †.

IN some ordinances for the government of the household, made in the reign of king Henry VII. it is said that the ESQUIRES for the BODY shall “array and unarray the KING, “and no man else was to set hand on him.” But this, I apprehend, must at that period be confined within the limits of the *bedchamber*; for when the KING dressed in his *Privy Chamber*, the Eltham statutes (made in the next reign) say expressly

\* Hearne’s Discourses, Vol. I. p. 152. edit. 1773. in 2 vols 8vo.

† Le Neve’s Collections in the office of arms, WW.

(in the article relating to that apartment) the *king* is to be apparelled by the "GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER."

IN that room, against the time of the king's rising, were appointed to attend him SIX *gentlemen of the privy chamber*, TWO *gentlemen ushers*, FOUR *grooms*, the *page*, and the *barber*, which last was to come furnished with "water, cloths, bason, knives, combs, scissars, &c. for trimming and dressing the KING's head and beard." Both these circumstances might however very well subsist at the same time; for the KING might be dressed but loosely in the *bed-chamber* by the ESQUIRE of his BODY, and proceed to the more finished and ornamental part of his dress in the *privy chamber*.

AT dinner there was another office to be performed by the ESQUIRE; for the above-cited ordinances of king Henry VII. tell us that "one of the ESQUIRES of the BODY is to be ready, and obedient at *dinner* and *supper*, to serve the King of his *pottage* at such time as he shall be commanded by the *sewer* and *gentleman usher*." Whether the ESQUIRE served the king of any thing more than merely the *pottage* at *dinner* and *supper*, does not appear: but in the afternoon (on certain festivals at least) when there was a VOYDE \* the ESQUIRE served the KING with the *cup* when no greater estate was present.

\* A *voide* was a small refection of *spices* (a term at that time including all sorts of sweets of the confectionary kind), and *rich wines* frequently taken by the KING and QUEEN after *even-song*, which on great festivals was attended with much state. I have no better guess at the meaning of the word than that it is a transfer of the term from the *utensil* to the *ceremony*, a *vyder* being a kind of *tray*, still in use, under that denomination, for the purpose of moving glasses, &c. from one room to another. Time seems to have contracted the word a little, though its meaning has been enlarged so far as to imply the whole ceremony. "After which there was a VOYDE" occurs frequently in accounts of an-

THOUGH we have now left the KING in his *privy chamber*, and in the hands of the servants of that apartment, yet we must not entirely dismiss the ESQUIRE; for Sir H. Spelman says, that when the KING went out, the office of the ESQUIRE was to follow him and carry the cloak \*.

THUS much for the office of the ESQUIRE of the BODY *by day*; but the principal, most essential, and most honorable part of his duty was *at night*: for when the KING retired to bed, the ESQUIRE had the concentrated power of the *gentlemen ushers*, the *vice chamberlain*, and *lord chamberlain*, in himself, having the absolute command of the house both above and below stairs. At this period (the reign of king Henry VIII.) and till the close of the last century, the royal apartments, from the *bed chamber* to the *guard chamber* inclusively, were occupied in the night by one or more of the servants belonging to each chamber respectively. The principal officer, then called the GENTLE-

cient high festivals. But what most favours this derivation is a passage in Sir George Buck's Account of the Coronation of K. Richard III. "Lastly," says he, "after dinner came the *lord mayor* of London and the *sheriff* with a VOYDER." [Life of K. Richard III.] The lord mayor of London is chief butler on a coronation, and serves the king with a cup of wine, and this formerly might be a branch of that office. The only vestiges of a *voyde* remaining at present are preserved in the ceremony of the MAUNDY, performed in his majesty's chapel at White-Hall when after *evening prayers* (the business of the day being finished) the *officers* belonging to the *Almshouse* retire to the *Vestry*, where they are served, by the proper officers respectively, with *Rose water* to wash their hands, and for their refreshment with *Rolls of Bread*, and *Sack*.

\* Die, principem foris progredientem, subsequitur (sc. Armiger ad corpus) palium ejus ferens in casula. [Spelman's Gloss. in voce *Armiger*.] The *esquire* attended the *king* in progresses probably for this as well as other purposes. [See Leland's Collectanea, edit. ult. Vol. IV. p. 191.] This branch of the *esquire's* office has now devolved upon the *Page of Honour*, who, at Reviews, carries the KING's *cloak*, or in more modern language his *surcoat*, on horseback placed before him in a port-manteau of blue velvet richly guarded with gold lace.

MAN (now the LORD) of the *bed chamber*, slept on a pallet-bed in the same room with the KING, and in the *ante-room*, between the *privy chamber* and the *bed chamber*, (in the reign of king Charles II. at least) slept the GROOM of the *bed chamber* \*. In the *privy chamber* next adjoining slept TWO of the six GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER in waiting, and in the *presence chamber* the ESQUIRE of the BODY, on a pallet-bed, upon the *haut pas*, under the *cloth of estate*, while one of the PAGES of the *presence chamber* slept in the same room, without the verge of the canopy, not far from the door. All these temporary beds were put up at night, and displaced in the morning, by the officers of a particular branch of the wardrobe called *the wardrobe of beds*. Beyond all these in the *guard room* was the *watch*, consisting of a certain number of the *yeomen of the guard*.

AFTER Supper, previous to the KING's retiring to his Bed Chamber, the proper Officers were to see all things furnished for the Night, some for the KING's *Bed Chamber*, and others for the KING's *Cup-board*, which was sometimes in the Privy Chamber, and sometimes in the Presence Chamber, at the Royal Pleasure, and furnished with Refections for the KING's Refreshment if called for. After this the *Officers of the Day* retired, and committed all to the Charge of the ESQUIRE of the BODY. This Domestick Ceremony was called THE ORDER of ALL-NIGHT; the Nature of which I shall now give at large from an account preserved in the LORD CHAMBERLAIN'S OFFICE †. The Writer who was himself an ESQUIRE of the BODY to two successive KINGS goes circumstantially through the whole of

\* Ordinances of King Charles II.

† Communicated to me by the late George Wilmot, Esq. when first clerk in that office.

the ESQUIRE's Business *of the Night*; from whence it will appear that, even so lately as the middle of last Century, the Office was of so confidential a Nature, that no Dispatch, Letter, or Message, could be communicated to the KING *in the Night*, but what was brought to the ESQUIRE on Duty, and by him carried *in propria persona* to the KING.

I HAVE taken the liberty to add such notes as appear necessary for the information of those who are unacquainted with the establishment of the Royal Household.

*The ORDER of ALL-NIGHT,*

As described by *FERDINANDO MARSHAM*

ESQUIRE of the BODY

TO K. CHARLES I. and K. CHARLES II\*.

“**T**HE ORDER of ALL-NIGHT for the KING was  
“anciently as followeth.

“The *Gentleman-Usher, Daily Waiter* †, having the Charge  
“of constant Attendance upon his Majesty until 9 o’Clock at  
“Night, called to the *Yeoman Usher* ‡ attending at the *Guard*  
“*Chamber Door* for *Ten Yeomen* to attend him to go for ALL-  
“NIGHT for the King. The *Gentleman Usher* went bare-headed,  
“and the *Yeoman [Usher]* to the *Pantry* for *bread*—to the *But-*

\* Mr. Marsham was a collateral Ancestor of the Right Honourable Lord ROMNEY, being the younger Brother of the first Sir John Marsham, Baronet, as appears by comparing Wood’s *Athenæ Oxonienses* with the *Peerages*. I find him an Esquire of the Body to King Charles II. in a Present State of the Year 1674 [pene me]; and it appears by his own account that he had served K. Charles I. in the same capacity.

†. In the *Presence Chamber*, which is situated next without the *Privy Chamber*, are four Gentlemen Ushers, *Daily Waiters*, who at present officiate Monthly by turns. The Superior of these is the Gentleman Usher of the *Black Rod*, whose attendance on the King is dispensed with on account of his Parliamentary Duty, he being the Gentleman Usher appropriated to the House of Peers. He is likewise Gentleman Usher of the Most Noble Order of the GARTER.

‡ These, *eight* in Number, are now a Branch of the *Yeomen* of the Guard, and are the lowest Order of Ushers.

“ *tery*

“ *tery* [i. e. Butlery] for Two Flagons of Beer \*—to the *Spicery*  
 “ for *Sugar, Nutmegs, &c.*—to the *Wine-Cellar* for two great  
 “ Flagons of *Wine* †—and drank the KING’s Health in both  
 “ Cellars, causing all to be uncovered going and back, having  
 “ a *Groom of the Chamber* ‡ carrying a lighted Torch before the  
 “ *Gentleman Usher* until he returned into the *Presence Chamber*,  
 “ and lay all the *Services* upon the *Cup-board* there; and so de-  
 “ livers all to the ESQUIRE of the BODY and takes his Leave.

“ The ESQUIRE then takes the *Inner Keys* and Charge of  
 “ ALL-NIGHT, calls to the *Yeoman Usher* or *Clerk* of the *Cheque*  
 “ for the Roll of the *Watch* and the *Page* of the *Presence* §,  
 “ with a *Silver Basen*, with a *Wax Morter* ||, and *Sizes* \*\*, at-  
 “ tends the ESQUIRE into the *Privy Gallery* ††. Then he [the  
 “ ESQUIRE] takes the *Basen* ‡‡, &c. and carries it to the KING’s

\* A Flagon, according to Bp. Fleetwood, held Four Quarts, or a Gallon, [v. *Chronicon Pretiosum*.]

† By great Flagons of Wine perhaps is meant Ale-Measure. The Surplus of these Articles was then probably a Perquisite to some inferior officer.

‡ Of these Officers there are *Ten*, who belong to the Great Chamber (long confounded with the Guard Chamber), and are properly the Household Messengers under the Lord Chamberlain.

§ Four in number, who wait alternately in the Presence Chamber.

|| Derived from the French word *Mortier*, which, among other things, signifies A Chamber Lamp [Cotgrave in *Vocis Mortier*]. Mr. Menage thinks that the *Presidents au Mortier* in France are so styled from the shape of their Caps, which originally resembled an Apothecary’s Morter. [v. Menage, *Dict. Etymologique*, in voce *Mortier*.] An Etymological Writer, however, tells us, that the Term, as applied to their Caps is Celtic, and that the Word *Mortier* is a Compound of *Mor* (great) and *Tier* (Crown). [v. A Specimen of an Etymological Vocabulary, p. 44. London. 1768, 8vo.]

\*\* Certain Allowances of Bread, Beer, Cheese, &c. are so called to this Day in the University of Cambridge.

†† The Court was then at White-Hall, where there was a Privy Gallery. See the following Dissertation *prope finem*.

‡‡ The Use of the Basen will be explained hereafter in Sir Francis Kynaston’s Note on a Passage in Chaucer, with a fuller Description of the *Mortier*.

*Bed-*

“ *Bed-chamber*, and stays until his majesty goes into his bed,  
 “ and then goes himself to bed, under the *State* in the *Presence*  
 “ *Chamber*, in a *pallet-bed* \*, sent up from the *ward-robe*. At  
 “ eight o'clock in the morning there was the ESQUIRE's breakfast  
 “ usually brought up to the *waiter's chamber*, where the *Gentle-*  
 “ *man Usher* attended with a *Quarter Waiter* †, to relieve and  
 “ discharge him, and to take care of the *daily waiting*, and to  
 “ see the *presence* and other *rooms* made sweet and clean. The  
 “ breakfast was a good piece of boiled beef of fourteen pound  
 “ weight, with bread, beer, and wine; and sometimes a boiled ca-  
 “ pon, and a piece of veal or mutton.

“ THERE was a silk *traverse* ‡ hung up, and drawn by the *page*  
 “ [of the *presence*] and the *chair* turned, and the *page* lay on a  
 “ *pallet-bed* without the *traverse*.

“ AFTER

\* Etymologists differ so much about the derivation of the word *Pallet*, that I must beg leave to refer you to *Junius*, *Skinner*, *Minsheu*, &c. We all know that it was a low bed, without curtains, very little raised above the floor, and which, for it's more easy removal, I apprehend, usually went upon wheels: from whence, in very humble life, it was vulgarly called a *Trundle-bed*, as also a *Truckle-bed*, which in the day-time, for want of room, was concealed under a higher bed.

† There are *eight* gentlemen ushers *quarterly-waiters*, subordinate in rank to the gentlemen ushers *daily-waiters*, one of whom now waits monthly in the *presence-chamber*.

‡ This term, in the present instance, merely implies a *curtain*; but it is frequently used, by a *Synecdoche*, to express the whole *cloth* of *estate*, or *canopy*. The word seems to have been imported from Italy—*Traversa*, in old Italian, signifying a *curtain*, meaning, I presume, when applied to a window, as being drawn *cross* it, which afterwards might be adopted to express *curtains* in general. [v. Florio's Italian Dictionary in voce]. The *Royal Traverses* seem to have been *fixed* in some apartments, and in others to have been *temporary*: thus anciently upon *marriages*, *christenings*, &c. occasional *traverses* were put up in the *chapel royal*, and the little *canopy* or *pavilion*, now erected by the side of the altar, when the KING and

“ AFTER the ESQUIRE of the BODY had carried the *morter* into the *bed-chamber*, and received the *word* of the KING, with his *treble* [triple] *key*, which the ESQUIRE in waiting always had, he locked the *outward doors* leading into the *privy lodgings*, and then went into the *guard-chamber*, and set the *watch* ||, and then returned to the *presence-chamber*, where he lodged under the *canopy*, being the CHIEF OFFICER OF THAT NIGHT.

“ IN all the time of my duty and service upon my Royal Master, his late *Majesty* of blessed memory, I, being ESQUIRE of the BODY, did always come into the KING's *bed chamber* without asking leave of any ; and I did every night, having my sword and cloak on, bring in the *morter* into his majesty's *bed chamber*, and stayed there as long as I pleased, which was commonly till his *majesty* went into bed ; and, having received the *word* from his majesty, I set the *guard*, and after ALL-NIGHT was served up, *I had the sole and absolute command of the house above and below stairs*, as his majesty did declare upon several occasions to be the right of my place. And in the

QUEEN receive the *communion*, would antiently have been called a *traverse*. The *stall* of the *Dean of the Chapel*, and those of *Archbishops* and *Bishops*, in their cathedrals, are *traverses*. All these smaller *traverses* have *curtains*, as antiently had the *cloth of estate*, not only of the *sovereign*, but of *some* of the *nobility* at least : for in a print of the *Howard Family*, engraved by Vertue, from a painting at *Norfolk-house*, the *curtains* of the *cloth of estate* are expressed. It is a private print, but is well known to the connoisseurs.

|| The *setting the watch* became afterwards the duty of the *Exempts* (or *Exons*) of the *Yeomen of the Guard*. These gentlemen are *officers* of that *Corps* next below the *Ensign*, and are *four* in number, who wait by turns. The *Exempt* on duty sleeps in the palace at present, being commander of the detachment of *yeomen* on duty for the night. As these officers were not added to the corps till the year 1668, we are brought nearly to the time when Mr. Marsham wrote this account, viz. between the Restoration and that year.

“ time of war, upon all occasions that required, I went into the  
 “ *bed chamber*, and awaked his *majesty*, and delivered all letters  
 “ and messages to his *majesty* : and many times, by his *majesty's*  
 “ command, I returned answers to the letters, and delivered  
 “ orders. And I remember that, coming to the KING's *bed*  
 “ *chamber door*, which was bolted on the inside, the late *earl*  
 “ of BRISTOL \*, then being in waiting, and lying there, he  
 “ unbolted the door upon my knocking, and asked me what  
 “ news?—I told him I had a letter for the KING. The Earl  
 “ then demanded the letter of me, which I told him I could  
 “ deliver to none but the KING himself : upon which the KING  
 “ said—‘ *The Esquire is in the right ; for he ought not to deliver*  
 “ *any letter or message to any but myself, he being at this time the*  
 “ CHIEF OFFICER OF MY HOUSE ; and if he had delivered the  
 “ letter to any other, I should not have thought him fit for his  
 “ place.’

“ And before this time I never heard that any offered to hin-  
 “ der the ESQUIRE from coming to the KING, and I have fre-  
 “ quently brought letters and messages to the *bed-side* when the  
 “ Duke of RICHMOND was in waiting †. By me,

“ FERDINANDO MARSHAM ‡,”

THE truth of this account of the ESQUIRE's access to the  
 KING's person *in the night* is confirmed by orders for the govern-  
 ment of the *Household* [Temp. Car. II.] above cited, made (as ap-

\* Of the name of *Digby*, created *Earl of Bristol*, anno 20 Jac. I. which title became extinct 1698.

† *Lodovick Stuart* was created *Duke of Richmond* 1604. The title extinguished 1672.

‡ We are probably indebted to Mr. *Marsham's* pique at the behaviour of the *Earl of Bristol* for this insight into the above little ceremonial.

pears from some circumstances) about the year 1670, and signed by the King, where it is said that,

“ If any business of importance or disturbance shall happen, which is fit we should be acquainted with, he (the ESQUIRE) shall come through our *Privy Chamber*, acquainting the GENTLEMEN that lodge there that it is for our service he passeth that way, and shall come and give notice to a GROOM of our BED-CHAMBER lodging in our *Drawing Room*\*, who shall acquaint the GENTLEMAN OF THE BED-CHAMBER *in waiting* therewith, and then bring the ESQUIRE unto him, to deliver his message and business unto us.” The Entrée of the *bed-chamber* was however soon afterwards taken from the ESQUIRES, notwithstanding the above-cited ordinance, which is so strong and explicit : for, by fresh orders of the year 1673, the ESQUIRE is directed,

“ To wait in the *withdrawing-room* to receive the *watch-word*; and that he presume not to come into our *bed-chamber* until we are pleased to call for him : and when we have given him the *word* he is to depart immediately, unless we shall command him to stay longer †.” The ESQUIRES however were restored to their pristine honour in the succeeding reign; for the orders respecting the *bed-chamber* of the year 1685, say, “ The ESQUIRE of our BODY attending shall come into our BED CHAMBER *without leave* when he brings the *morter*, to receive the *watch-word* from us, and may stay till we go to bed ‡.” After ALL-NIGHT was served, no one was permitted

\* An ante-room to the *bed-chamber*, between that and the *privy-chamber*.

† This appears from a controversy which arose (1683) between the *Lord Chamberlain* and the *Groom of the Stole*, touching the right of the former to the ENTRÉE of the *bed-chamber* without leave—the circumstances of which I hope to give in a future memoir.

‡ Orders for the *Government of the Bed Chamber* of that year, *penes me*.

(according to the statutes of Eltham) to come within the *presence chamber*, except the TWO GENTLEMEN who slept in the PRIVY CHAMBER. This order seems to have been grounded upon that of king Edward IV. (A. D. 1478,) which says, that after the service of ALL-NIGHT was performed, "no officer" [that is, who had *day-duty* only] "was to abide in his office, nor return to his office again after his departure, without especial commandment of the KING or the QUEEN, or else by a special token from the STEWARD of the *household*, or from the KING's or QUEEN'S CHAMBERLAIN \*." The following circumstances regarding the etiquette of the *morning* are observable when the presence chamber was to resume its state, without any traces of its having been used as a bed-chamber. The Eltham statutes say, "that the *page*" [of this chamber] "shall daily arise at *seven of the clock*, or soon after, making the fires, and warning the ESQUIRES of the BODY semblably to arise soon after that hour, so as they may be ready in the KING's *chamber*, dressed in all such things as appertaineth, by *eight of the clock* at farthest." And to shew how sacred this room was held even when the king was not present, none but the officers belonging to it were suffered to enter, not even the servants of the ESQUIRES themselves; for the order goes on and peremptorily

\* See the ordinances of king Edward IV. in the Harleian Library, N° 642. It may not be amiss to observe here that there were *two* books of household ordinances which issued within a few years of each other in that reign. The date of the *first* does not appear, but it is ascertained by Sir Robert Cotton, Bart. to have been of the year 1472, [v. Cottoni Posthuma, p. 167.] The *second* speaks for itself, and was of the year 1478, and is called "*The New Book of the Household of King Edward IV.*" They are both to be seen in Bibl. Harl. N° 642. ALL-NIGHT was then served from *Candlemas* to *Michaelmas* by *day-light*, and from *Michaelmas* to *Candlemas* by *eight o'clock* at farthest. [Ordinances of the year 1478.]

enjoins,

enjoins, "that none of the *servants* of the said ESQUIRES for the " BODY come within the *pallet*," [that is *presence*] "*chamber*, " but be attendant at the door of the same, as well at *night* as " in the *morning*, with such garments as their master shall " wear, and that the said PAGE, at the request and command- " ment of the said ESQUIRES, fetch in and bear out their " night-gear, and all other their apparel, and in like wise " make them ready as well at *night* as in the *morning* accord- " ingly." These orders then proceed to this effect, that lest the preparation of the chamber for the king's reception should be hindered by the negligence of the esquires, they were, if tardy in rising, to retire in their night-gowns to their private apartment, and there dress themselves; and if the room is not evacuated in due time, the PAGE is strictly commanded to represent the matter to the LORD CHAMBERLAIN without fear or affection at his peril.

THUS much, Sir, for the *domestick* functions of these ESQUIRES: we must now look for them in *processions* and other *solemnities*. On the demise of king Edward IV. the corpse was conveyed from the palace of Westminster to the abbey, "born " by divers KNIGHTS and ESQUIRES that were of his BODY \*." On the eve of the coronation of king Richard III. in the procession from the Tower to Westminster the *mantles* and *bats* of *estate* were "*worn* and *born* † by John Sapcote and William " Catesby ESQUIRES of the BODY of our sovereign LORD the " KING before his highness ‡." On this occasion their allowance for apparel from the *wardrobe* was *nine yards and a half of crimson velvet*. When king HENRY the SEVENTH's QUEEN

\* Archaeologia, vol. I. p. 348.

† See wardrobe account of the year 1483, printed in the Antiquarian Repository. Vol. II. p. 247.

‡ The *bats* I conceive were *born* in their hands: but the *mantles* are said to have been *worn bawderick-wise*, i. e. obliquely over the right shoulder in the manner of the antient sword-belt.

proceeded

proceeded from the *Tower* to *Westminster*, the day before the coronation, the canopy was born by four KNIGHTS of the BODY \*. On the following day at the coronation it was supported, as usual, by the barons of the cinque ports. Among others who accompanied the PRINCESS MARY, daughter of king HENRY VII. to France on her marriage with Louis XII. were eight ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY, with an extra allowance of thirteen shillings and four pence per day †. This was early in the reign of Henry VIII. who, though, he had but four ESQUIRES in ordinary, yet he perhaps had four extraordinary who might be called to this duty *propter dignitatem*, or possibly *supernumeraries* might be appointed *pro illâ vice*.

IN the same reign at the christening of prince EDWARD (afterwards king EDWARD VI.) the FONT was kept by two KNIGHTS and four ESQUIRES of the BODY ‡. At the coronation of king CHARLES II. in the procession through the city on horseback (says Ogleby), rode "in their places the ESQUIRES of the BODY four in number." At the coronation dinner we shall find two of them employed in a manner that shewed their official adhesion to the Royal Person: these we may suppose were the two seniors whose business is thus described by Ogleby. "Before the coronation dinner two ESQUIRES of the BODY took their seats upon two little footstools on either side of the feet of the KING's chair (which was placed opposite to the middle of the table,) and there sat till the KING came in to dinner, when rising, and performing their duty in placing the KING's robes, for his better

\* On account of the distance *twelve knights* were appointed for the purpose, *four* bearing it at a time, who relieved each other, by classes. [Addenda to Leland's Collectanea. Vol. IV. p. 221.]

† Idem. Vol. II. p. 702.

‡ M. 6. in Off. Arm. where the *knights* and *esquires* are mentioned by name.

"conveniency

"conveniency of sitting, they sat down again at the KING's feet some part of dinner time, until the KING gave them leave to rise \*." I find them in a similar position in the time of king RICHARD III. for in a MS. account of the coronation of that king and his queen ANNE it is said, that, during dinner, "two ESQUIRES of the BODY were lying (or rather, as we may suppose, sitting in a recumbent posture) under the KING's board †." In a like situation I find two *ladies* at the coronation of ELIZABETH the queen of king HENRY VII. for grace being said, "Dame Katheryn Gray, and maistriss Ditton, wente undre the table, wher the [they] sett on ether side the QUEEN's feete al the dyner time ‡."

IN all processions that I have seen, whether on *coronations*, to *parliament*, to *church*, or at *funerals*, these officers had a respectable place, and from their situations on such occasions and other authorities we may discern that they had a *specific* rank. Sir Henry Spelman gives them the *pas* of all *esquires by office* (such as may be termed, if I am allowed the expression, artificial esquires), and even doubts whether they did not precede the *eldest sons of* KNIGHTS: but of this last circumstance, Sir Henry speaks diffidently, and seems not to have given himself the trouble of enquiring minutely, as he might have done, the office and all its appendages being well known in his time §. Mr. Selden is silent on the subject of their precedence, as is Sir William Segar: Francis Markham, however, in his *Decades of Honour*, says, the first sort of

\* Ogleby's Coronation of King Charles II. p. 187.

† M. 7. in Off. Arm.

‡ Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, vol. IV. p. 226.

§ These are his words, "Inter Armigeros qui fiunt, non nascuntur, primarii habentur quatuor illi Armigeri ad corpus Regis:" and then adds, "Quos et equitum filiis primogenitijs anteponeudos asserunt." [Spelm. Gloss. in voce Armiger.]

*esquires*, are the ESQUIRES of the KING'S BODY \*. Mr. Camden likewise, speaking of *esquires*, says "the chief are they who "are chosen to attend the KING'S PERSON." These must be understood, to be the ESQUIRES in question; for those, who were antiently called *esquires of household*—were, at the time when Mr. Camden wrote, called *gentlemen of the PRIVY CHAMBER*. There can be little doubt then that these ESQUIRES were by their office the *premiers*, and had precedence of all *esquires* by *creation* and *office*, though not of all who had that denomination by *birth*. As these officers preceded all other *esquires*, so we may conclude analogically that KNIGHTS of the BODY had the precedence of other *knights*. This agrees very well with what Sir William Segar says †, "that the heralds at funerals are to marshall the mourners into their several classes, "as, *gentlemen, esquires, knights, &c.* ever preferring (*caeteris paribus*) *her majesty's officers and servants*." In processions at the latter end of the sixteenth and the beginning of the seventeenth centuries, I find the place of the ESQUIRES of the BODY varying very much, and, from comparing them, one would incline to doubt whether *they* or even *knights-bachelors*, had precedence. Thus (anno 1588) in *Queen Elizabeth's* procession to St. Paul's the ESQUIRES of the BODY had place *above* KNIGHTS; in a procession to parliament in the same reign, I find them *below* KNIGHTS, and at the QUEEN's funeral they are again placed *above* KNIGHTS. In king James's reign they walked *above* KNIGHTS at the KING's entry ‡. In the procession to parliament (1603) I find them *above* KNIGHTS, and on the same occasion (1614) *below* them. From this fluctuation of rank little

\* Decade II. Epistle 6. London 1626, small folio.

† Honour Military and Civil, p. 253.

‡ At the coronation of king James I. no *knights* walked,

can be collected: but as it is a glaring absurdity to suppose an *esquire* can, at any rate, precede a *knight*, the matter may be solved thus;—that in such of these cases where they went *above* KNIGHTS, they should have been styled KNIGHTS of the BODY; and when *below* them ESQUIRES of the BODY, distinguishing the *species* from the *genus*. But we can have recourse to more ancient authority from whence the ESQUIRE's rank may be discovered with precision; for, in the order of all estates set forth by Anthony earl Rivers in the 20th year of king Edward the Fourth, the parties are thus placed,

*Knights Bachelors.*

*Eldest sons of Bannerets.*

*Eldest sons of Bachelor Knights.*

ESQUIRES of the KING's BODY.

*Younger sons of Bannerets.*

*Younger sons of Knights Bachelors* \*.

From hence it is clear that the ESQUIRES of the BODY had at that period a middle rank with respect to *esquires by birth*, viz. *below* the *eldest sons of bannerets* and *knight-bachelors*, and *above* their *younger sons*.

THE *wife* of the ESQUIRE would likewise have a derivative rank, which is in some sort ascertained by the following authorities. In some ordinances of apparel which I find in the office of arms †, the *wife* of an ESQUIRE of the BODY might wear *five powderings* ‡ on her *bonnet*, when the *wife* of a *common esquire* might wear but two: and again in “the ordinance of apparel for all estates for the time of mourning made by MAR-

\* Hare's MSS. in Off. Arm.

† Vincent's Precedents.

‡ Each black tuft upon the white fur ground, which we collectively call *ermine*, is termed a *powdering*.

" GARET COUNTESS OF RICHMOND, (anno 18 Hen. VII. on  
 " the death of PRINCE ARTHUR \*) it is said that the queen's  
 " CHEYF GENTYLOWMAN, and SQUYR'S WYFE for the BODYE,  
 " *being in houshold*, to wear in all things like LORD'S DAUGH-  
 " TERS." At that time of day, and indeed till the close of  
 the last century, the mourning for the whole household was  
 provided at the king's charge by the officers of the great ward-  
 robe; and antiently when the *wife* of the ESQUIRE was com-  
 plimented with like mourning as a BARON'S daughter, I find  
 the ESQUIRE himself had the same allowance as a KNIGHT,  
 viz. *six* yards of cloth. A KNIGHT indeed had livery for *four* ser-  
 vants, and an ESQUIRE for *three* only; but at the same time other  
*esquires* had but *five* yards of cloth for themselves, and livery  
 for only *two* servants†. Not long before this period the ESQUIRES  
 had some pre-eminence *in point of drefs* on ordinary occasions;  
 for in the statute of apparel made in the 22d year of king  
 Edw. IV. (chap. 1.) it is declared, " that none under the degree  
 " of a *knight* shall wear any *damaske* or *sattin* in their *gowns*;  
 " but only ESQUIRES of the BODY, upon pain to forfeit for  
 " every default *forty shillings*." This was a greater privilege  
 than it appears to be *primâ facie*; for the *yeomen* of the *crown*,  
 who were the premiers of that degree at the time, had not  
 only no similar indulgence in this particular above the rest of  
 the *yeomanry* of England, but were prohibited *by name* from  
 wearing any thing above their natural rank. There are like-  
 wise exceptions in favor both of these ESQUIRES and their WIVES  
 in a former statute of apparel, in the 3d year of this reign.

It may be matter of surprize to those who are partially ac-  
 quainted with the royal household, that the salary of an officer so

\* In the Office of Arms.

† Bibl. Harl. N° 1107. fol. 54.

high in rank and confidence should never have exceeded (even to the last) 50 marks or £ 33. 6. 8. per ann. This must be taken comparatively with other collateral officers, such as *gentlemen ushers*, &c. for at the accession of king Henry VIII. the *gentlemen ushers* of the *privy chamber*, and the *gentlemen ushers daily waiters*, had but £ 20 per annum, when the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY* had £ 33. 6. 8. which constituted a very material difference at that time of day. We have seen that the fee or salary of an *ESQUIRE* of every denomination was in the reign of king Edward IV. *seven pence halfpenny per diem*, that being an aliquot part of a pound. The salary of the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY* however made a rapid advance, either at the latter end of the reign of king Edward IV. or early in the reign of king Richard III. in the very first year of whose reign I find a warrant to the receiver of the Duchy of Lancaster, “to content and pay unto Bryan Talbot, fifty marks for his fee of “*SQUIRE* of the *BODY* for the year last\*.” Neither is this a singular case, for there are others to be found of equal date in

\* Bibl. Harl. N° 433. where docquets of many such warrants are to be seen. This antiently was the mode by which great part of the KING's *household* was paid: for the KING then granted to his *servants* assignments upon the officers employed in the receipt of his revenue, such as *sheriffs* of counties, *collectors* of customs, *subsidies*, &c. These *assignees* had *letters-patent*, *tallies* of the *Exchequer*, *writs* of *privy-seal*, *warrants*, &c. entitling them to their respective claims, and in default of payment they brought actions of debt in the court of *Exchequer* against the officer on whom their salary was charged. [See Madox's MSS. in the British Museum, N° 4486: and likewise his History of the *Exchequer*.] This mode of payment is not entirely worn out; for the KING's *serjeant at arms*, appropriated to the *lord mayor of London*, receives his salary at this day from the *sheriffs* of *London*, (who are conjunctively the *sheriff* of *Middlesex*,) it being levied by the *serjeant's patent*, upon the KING's revenues arising from the city of *London* and the county of *Middlesex*. This appears from the words of the *lord Chamberlain's warrant*, directed to the *attorney* or *solicitor general*, to prepare the *serjeant's patent* for the royal signature.

the

the same MS. which shew that *fifty marks*, or £ 33. 6s. 8d. was then become the established stipend, which continued to the last.

As to other emoluments accruing to the ESQUIRES, more than we have already seen, I observe none. There was indeed an apartment at Whitehall allotted to the ESQUIRE on duty\*, which, as he slept in the *presence chamber*, and was dieted collectively with other branches of the household of similar rank, operated merely as a *dressng-room*, and was but a negative advantage. Neither do I perceive any contingent perquisites arising to the ESQUIRE, such as *New-years gifts*†, or *fees of honour*, which last are *Droits of office*, granted to certain household officers upon the making of *Knights*, the creation of *peers*, the homage of *bishops*, &c.

THE ESQUIRES of Knights Bachelors had anciently a privilege which would hardly be denied to those of the higher order belonging to the Sovereign; viz. a freedom from personal arrest when in actual service, of which Mr. Selden has left us a remarkable case, wherein it appears that *Sir Francis Tias* recovered £ 5. damages, in the reign of king Edward I. in the court of Wakefield, in Yorkshire, against *German Mercer*, for arresting the *horse* of *William Lepton*, that was his ESQUIRE, and so making him to be unattended—[*quia fuit sine armigero* ‡]. This exemption from personal arrest extended to other branches of the household, as will appear from the certificate of a *Gentleman of the Privy Chamber*, in the reign of king Charles II. given in the following Dissertation.

\* See the Ground-plan of WHITE-HALL, engraved by Vertue, from a drawing made 1680, and now republished by your Society.

† New-years Gifts continued to be given both by the LORD STEWARD and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN till the reign of king James II. Lists of both which I have seen.

‡ Tit. of Hon. p. 833. Edit. 1631.

THUS

THUS much, Sir, I have ventured to offer, and I hope with tolerable grounds of authority, with regard to the *nature* and *duty* both *ancient* and *modern* of these officers. I shall now beg leave to add a word or two of their still greater supposed antiquity, which will gradually lead to their extinction.

I dare not advance any thing tending to ascertain the first appointment of the ESQUIRES of the BODY as *Household Officers*: but from the nature of their *duty*, and as an appendage to KNIGHTHOOD, one would imagine them to have been co-eval with KNIGHTHOOD itself in its *military* sense. Mr. Selden says he meets with the earliest mention of the title of *Armigeri* in *Orderricus Vitalis*; and the period alluded to is the reign of king William the Conqueror: but from what I am going to offer, this title appears evidently to have been in use, generally speaking, much earlier, though we cannot say they were appropriated to the BODY; for there were from very early times Esquires of the Household [*Armigeri de Hospitio*] out of whom some might be more closely annexed to the KING's person, and be appointed to the BODY [*ad Corpus*]. KING ALFRED had his ESQUIRES, but whether they were of his *Household* only, or of his *Body*, is not clear; yet one would incline to believe (from the complexion of the times) that they might be occasionally and particularly in the field, *selectively* such. Be this as it may, he pays great regard to them, both generally and specifically by his will, whereby he gives to each of his ESQUIRES 100 marks. [cuilibet armigerorum meorum [sc. *lego*] centum marcas, singulis eorum *pro se* centum marcas \*.]

I likewise meet with Robert de Roelent an ESQUIRE to king EDWARD the CONFESSOR, by whom he was afterwards made a Knight †. James de Burton was an ESQUIRE of the BODY to

\* Afferius Menevensis de rebus gestis Alfredi.

† Brady's Hist. of England, p. 219. in a note.

king Richard I \*. There can be little doubt that CHAUCER was an EsQUIRE of the BODY to king Edward III. Sir Francis Kynaston, who translated the two first Books of Chaucer's *Troilus and Cresseide* into Latin Verse, labours to prove it in a note upon a passage where the poet has accidentally dropt the word *morter*, which Sir Francis interprets to be an allusion to the *morter* made use of in the Royal *Bed Chamber*; and from thence draws his conclusion. Sir Francis, who had been a KNIGHT of the BODY to king Charles I. was naturally struck with the passage, and in his note has gone further into the nature of the office of an EsQUIRE of the BODY than any *printed* account I ever saw; but his conclusion is rather weak; for the ceremony of serving ALL-NIGHT, and the use of the *morter*, must have been very well known to every interior branch of the officers of the household. Weak as the proof is, Sir F. Kynaston seems to have had truth on his side; for, I think, we are masters of stronger evidence, which will leave no doubt, and will clear two points at once—*first*, that *Chaucer* was an EsQUIRE of the BODY, and *secondly*, that he possessed the offices of SCUTIFER and ARMIGER successively. This last circumstance will shew that the advance from the SCUTIFER to the ARMIGER was progressive, and confirm what has been suggested concerning these two posts in the early part of this memoir. These proofs are to be found in Urry's *Life of Chaucer*, who has preserved a commission of the 46th year of king Edward III. wherein *Chaucer* is styled "SCUTIFER noster;" and likewise a grant of the 48th year of the same king, wherein he is styled "Dilectus ARMIGER noster."

\* Hist. of Leicestershire, by William Burton, Esq. (whose ancestor he was), p. 177.

This

This was at a period when, I think, the words *Armiger* and *Scutifer* could not be considered as synonymous terms \*.

THE ordinances of king Edward the Fourth, before cited, and which were founded on the model of king Edward III. speak of the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY* as old, established officers of the *Royal Household*. Weever has preserved, out of Digswell-church, in Hertfordshire, a monumental inscription, to the memory of John Perient, who was *ESQUIRE* of the *BODY* to king Richard II. king Henry IV. and king Henry V †.

WE have already seen them in the subsequent reigns of king Henry VI. king Edward IV. king Richard III. king Henry VII. king Henry VIII. and king Edward VI. but nothing has been hitherto said of the reigns of queen *MARY* and queen *ELIZA-*

\* Sir Francis Kynaston's note, which Mr. Urry has given at large, is worth transcribing. The Lines in Chaucer which occasioned it are,

"For by that *morter* whiche I se *brenne*

"Know I ful well that *day* is not far *henne*."

Troil. & Cress. Lib. IV. Line 1245.

"This word [*sc. Morter*] doth plainly intimate our author *Jeffrey Chaucer* to have been an *ESQUIRE* of the *BODY* in ordinary to the *KING*, whose office it is, after he has charged and set the watch of the guard, to carry in the *morter*, and set it by the *KING's bed-side*; for he takes from the cupboard a *silver basin*, and therein pours a little water, and then sets a *round cake* of *virgin wax* in the middle of the *basin*, in the middle of which *cake* is a wick of burnbass [*i. e. cotton*], which being lighted burns as a *match-light* all night at the *KING's bed-side*. It has, as I conceive, the name of *morter*, from the likeness it has, when near consumed, to a mortar wherein you bray *spices*; for the flame melting first the middle of the wax cake which is nearest to it; the wax by degrees, like the sand in an hour-glass, runs evenly from all sides to the middle to supply the wick. This *royal ceremony* Chaucer wittily fancies to be in *Cresseide's bed-chamber*, calling this kind of match-light by the name of *morter*, which very few courtiers besides the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY* (who only are admitted after *ALL-NIGHT* is served to come into the *KING's bed-chamber*) do understand what is meant by it."

† Weever's Funeral Monuments, p. 594. Ed. 1631.

BETH.

BETH. One would be led to suppose, that a *Queen Regent* had no officer of this nature; but I observe the *Esquires* were continued in both reigns, though perhaps some part of their duty might be dispensed with. Queen Mary had three\*; Queen Elizabeth four† *Esquires*, at the old salary of *fifty marks*. Sir Thomas Bodley was appointed one of them to Queen Elizabeth, 1580, as we are informed by Antony Wood, and the writer of Sir Thomas's Life, in Latin, prefixed to the catalogue of the Bodleian Library, printed at Oxford, 1697‡. I mention these two authorities because the compilers of the *Biographia Britannica* call him *Gentleman Usher*§.

It may not seem strange that a *Queen Regent* should have officers of this sort, though one rather wonders to find them in the retinue of a *Queen Consort*; but I have seen in the account of the cofferer of PHILIPPA, the QUEEN of king Edward III. in his 25th year [preserved in his Majesty's State Paper Office] an order to pay to Sir William Fitz Warren, KNIGHT of the BODY to the QUEEN, 10 marks for his salary for one year. But this is not the only instance; for I observe, that in a book of ceremonies to be used on great feasts, of the 9th of king Henry VII, in the article relating to Twelfth Day, an *ESQUIRE* of the BODY is mentioned as being appropriated to the QUEEN§.

\* See a MS. containing all Q. Mary's officers, &c. in the Library of your Society.

† Peck's *Desiderata Curiosa*, V. I. p. 39. Edit. 1779.

‡ This Life of Sir Thomas Bodley was translated from the English into Latin by Dr. George Hakewill, who was his kinsman. Wood's *Athenæ*, Vol. II. col. 125.

§ Dr. Hakewill's word is *somatophylax*, which literally agrees with the writer above cited, who calls the *Esquire keeper of the person*, v. *antea*, p. 12.

§ Bibl. Harl. N. 642.

WE have likewise seen them in the reigns of king James I. king Charles I. and king Charles II. *four* in number *in ordinary*, when, by Mr. Martham's account, they were in full employment and confidence. We are drawing to a period however when we must very soon take leave of them; for though there was a very great Retrenchment made by king Charles II. (1668) and many of the KING's State Officers swept away, or contracted in their salaries, yet the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY* were preserved entire, both as to number and stipend; but as soon as the Ceremony of the Coronation of king James II. was performed (1685), the *ESQUIRES* were reduced to two (in common with the *CARVERS*, *SEWERS*, and *CUP-BEARERS*) at which number they continued during the life of king William III. with whom the office expired.

I have the honour to be, SIR,

With great respect,

Your very obedient humble servant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

POST-

## P O S T S C R I P T.

THE Retrenchment of the year 1685, made so soon after the Coronation of king James II. has occasioned an error in Sandford's Account of it. He mentions but *two* ESQUIRES in the *printed* List of those that walked in the procession, but afterwards in the *Delineation* he gives *four*. The case, I apprehend, was thus: The drawings, of course, would be first made from the proceedings of the day, *ad vivum*, when *four* ESQUIRES actually walked; but, in the mean while, between that time and the adjustment of the *printed* account, the reduction was made. There was an interval of near two years before Mr. Sandford's work appeared, and he had probably heard of the reduction, and altered his *letter press* upon the occasion, forgetting that he had given *four* ESQUIRES in the *plate*.

I must beg leave to add a second *postscript*, to suggest that the *two* \* ESQUIRES of the BODY to KING WILLIAM III. walked at the Coronation of QUEEN ANNE, as servants of the *demised* KING, and most probably enjoyed their salaries for life, though they were not continued in office.

\* The two last Officers of the BODY seem to have been Sir Thomas Grantham, Knt. and William Sydenham, Esq. [See Chamberlayne's Pref. State of the year 1694.]

household at this day that carries with it much of it's primary use and intention, and some officers, from desuetude, have little left but the name, and of these principally are the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER. From being antiently near and, I may almost say, companionable officers to the Royal Person, they are now become the most remote, and seldom visible in their proper sphere (and then scarce distinguishable as such) above *three* in a reign. Two of these GENTLEMEN, chosen for their port, are nominated by the lord chamberlain, and knighted (if not knights \*) to represent at Coronations the dukes of AQUITAINE and NORMANDY; an honour of the first magnitude, as it gives them for the moment (representatively) precedence of the ARCHBISHOP of CANTERBURY. At the Coronation of KING WILLIAM and QUEEN MARY they took rank of GEORGE PRINCE of DENMARK, although he had married the QUEEN's Sister. The prince walked only as a duke, being created duke of Cumberland, &c. April 6, 1689, a few days before the Coronation, with precedence of all dukes by act of parliament purposely to give him a place and a proper rank on that solemnity: but at the Coronation of QUEEN ANNE the PRINCE had rank above the representatives of the dukes of Aquitaine and Normandy as the Consort of the QUEEN, and had his train borne †. The dress of these two on such occasions is sumptuous, bordering on royalty, their mantles being of crimson velvet, lined with minever, and powdered with ermine: their caps of cloth of gold furred and powdered likewise with ermine ‡. The rest of the GENTLEMEN

\* *Knighthood* is an indispensable qualification, for at the last coronation (1761) Sir Thomas Robinson, who was appointed to one of these offices, was obliged to accept the honour of *knighthood* although he was a *baronet*.

† See the ceremonials of coronations in the College of Arms.

‡ *Idem*. There is a great oversight in Ogleby's Account of the Coronation of King Charles II. He gives us in the copper-plate of the procession on horseback what

MEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER have now a place in the procession next below the Barons of the Exchequer, and above the King's Serjeants at Law. Anciently they had a still higher place; for at the coronation of king Edward VI. the Gentlemen of the Privy Chamber followed the canopy immediately after the Assistant Train Bearer \*.

THE *second* occasion when the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER appear in office is upon the *Entry of Ambassadors* from *Venice*, a ceremonial of great cavalcade. The state of *Venice*, though it has always a *resident* at our court, never sends *Ambassadors* but *semel in regno*, and that only in token of compliment on an *Accession*. The principal in this *Embassy* is always knighted (for which the customary fees are remitted) and besides being presented with a sword of great value (supposed to be that with which he is knighted) he receives, as an augmentation to his arms, *some part of the armorial bearings of the KING of GREAT BRITAIN*, placed *in chief* upon his family coat, several grants of which made at different times are to be found in the Herald's Office †. The account of the *Entrée* of these *Ambassadors*, in the year 1763, may be seen at large in the Gazette of the 30th of April in that year; where it will appear, that *six* of these GENTLEMEN attended their EXCELLENCIES on every *official* occasion, from their landing at the Tower, to their audience of leave.

THE same ceremony was formerly common to all ambassadors of equal rank, though it is now in other cases discontinued and from Sir John Finett's *Philoxenis* it appears to have been in ge-

what he styles *two persons* representing the DUKES of AQUITAINE and NORMANDY without any further discrimination: but in the printed account of it, and in the procession on foot, he has omitted them.

\* Addenda to Leland's *Collectanea*, vol. IV. p. 324.

† See the Earl Marshal's Book, v. also Finett's *Philoxenis*, p. 113.

44      *On the original Nature, Duty, &c. of the*

neral use in the reign of king James I. An ambassador from the emperor of Morocco to king Charles I. 1637. was attended to his audience by *twelve* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, "riding on brave horses with foot-cloths;" a printed account of which Ceremonial may be seen in the Museum.

As this is the only solemn *entrée* now in use, I shall beg leave to insert the account at large in the Appendix [N<sup>o</sup> I.] from the Gazette, whence it will be discerned how far the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER are employed in it; and I the rather do it, as I trust the repetition of it is at a great distance.

THE last publick appearance of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER is on a very different and opposite occasion, viz. on a *demise* of the KING or QUEEN, when, at the funeral, they bear the *canopy* over the *royal* CORPSE. This line of their duty may probably extend to the *heir apparent*, or *presumptive heir*; and formerly it certainly went to remoter branches of the royal family; though at present the bearing the canopy over the younger and collateral relatives to the crown has fallen into different hands occasionally \*. The duty, however, of these GENTLEMEN till towards the close of the last century went still further; for they had not only the honour of supporting the *canopy*, but some of them had the office of carrying the BODY, in quality of *Under-bearers*. Thus it appears from the ceremonials in the office of arms, that on the following occasions when *twelve* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER bore the *CANOPY* *eighteen*

\* In the case of an *Heir Apparent*, or *presumptive Heir*, I conceive the office would rest with the GENTLEMEN of the KING's PRIVY CHAMBER, where the party has not an *establishment*. The late PRINCE of WALES [Frederick] having a household, the *canopy* at his funeral was borne by eight of his own servants. N. B. He had no *Gentlemen* of his *Privy Chamber*.

more of them carried the *Body*, viz. At the Funeral of HENRY Duke of GLOUCESTER (the 4th Son of K. Ch. I.) 1660—of the PRINCESS Dowager of ORANGE 1660—and of the QUEEN Dowager of BOHEMIA 1661. The *Body* of K. CHARLES II. was intended to have been carried by these Gentlemen \*, but the Coffin was too heavy, and required men of more robust habits, when the *Yeomen of the Guard* were called in, who have ever since performed that Office. This however was not the first time the *Yeomen* were employed in that Duty; for *twelve* of them carried the Body of their Institutor K. HENRY THE SEVENTH to his Grave †.

At the Funeral of his *late* Majesty K. GEORGE the SECOND *ten* of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER bore the CANOPY, *one* at each of the Eight Staves, and *two* at each Head-Staff; and had every of them an allowance of black Cloth for Mourning, which issued from the Great Wardrobe by Warrant from the Lord Chamberlain ‡.

As no *salary* or *pecuniary emolument* whatsoever attends the post at present, it may be asked why it is so much sought after?—The answer is very easy, and almost *in omnium ore*—It is an exemption from serving the Office of *Sheriff*, &c. There issues at the commencement of every reign an inhibitory *Proclamation*,

\* Funeral Ceremonials in the Office of Arms.

† Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, Vol. IV. p. 305.

‡ The supporters of the *Canopy* on the demise of *collateral* branches of the Royal Family, when *naval* or *military* honours are not paid to the deceased, are still in part taken out of an inferior Line of the PRIVY CHAMBER: for at the funeral of PRINCE FREDERICK-WILLIAM, the *present* KING's BROTHER, and of the PRINCESS LOUISA-ANNE his *Majesty's* SISTER, the Bearers of the *Canopy* were the *four* GROOMS of the PRIVY CHAMBER and the *four senior* GENTLEMEN USHERS QUARTERLY WAITERS. The *Canopy* over the body of EDWARD *late* DUKE of YORK was borne by VICE-ADMIRALS, and that over WILLIAM *late* DUKE of CUMBERLAND by GENERAL OFFICERS. [See Funeral Ceremonials in the office of Arms.]

to prevent the appointment of any of the *royal servants* to publick offices, which implies, among the rest, the *Shrievalty* of a *County*; and the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER being sworn servants of the KING (though without salary or constant Duty) are of course included in such prohibition \*. It has often happened, that a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER has been returned to the Council, and been pricked (as the term is) for *Sheriff*; but, I believe, it has been as often superseded by a new appointment, and the party, by order of council, discharged. A particular case happened (anno 1761) with regard to *Sir William Hart, Knt.* who was elected *Sheriff* of LONDON against his consent, and pleaded, as an exemption, that he was a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER; but his case came neither within the letter nor the spirit of the proclamation: for though the *Sheriffs* of LONDON are consolidated, *quatenus* MIDDLESEX, and act provincially as one man, yet being elective by the Livery of London, *Sir William Hart* could not come within the *royal* intention; nothing but a civil disability could discharge him, and his Plea of course was over-ruled.

THE present appointment of a GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER runs in general terms, viz. "To have, hold, exercise, and enjoy, the said place, together with all rights, profits, privileges, and advantages thereunto belonging, in as full and ample manner as any GENTLEMAN of his MAJESTY'S MOST HONOURABLE PRIVY CHAMBER doth or hath held and enjoyed, or of right ought to hold and enjoy the same." These are the words as they stand at this day; but anciently the rights and privileges were described at large, and in an appointment anno 1662 (the 14th of King Charles the Second) are thus

\* See the Appendix [No. II.]—This is inserted for the information of such of the Royal Servants into whose hands these papers may fall, that they may be apprized of the Immunities incidental to their Offices.

set forth. "His person is not to be arrested or detained without leave first had and obtained—neither is he to bear any *publick* "Office, nor to be impannelled on any *Inquest* or *Jury*—nor to "be warned to serve at *Affizes* or *Sessions*, whereby he may "pretend excuse to neglect his MAJESTY's service." This points immediately at an exemption from the *Shrievalty* of a county, where the nomination is in the King—and the reason is given for the dispensation.

SUCH is the present state of this Body of 48 Gentlemen of Rank and Fortune, who, it is natural to suppose, had, in their primary institution, more official attendance, and *salaries* in common with the rest of the servants upon the Royal Establishment; for the purpose of discovering which circumstances we must revert to times when the officers of the court were confined to the functions for which they were originally appointed.

THE most ancient mention of them that I have been able to find (though under a different denomination) is in the *Liber Niger Domus Regis Angliæ* (Temp. Edw. IV.) which is sufficiently explicit to shew the true intent of their institution. They were called *Esquires of Household*, with *duty, salary, &c.* and their nature and office is thus described:

"SQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, FORTY or *more*, if it please the "King, by the advice of his high council to be chosen, men of "their possession, worship, and wisdom: also to be of fundry *Sbires*, "by whom it may be known the disposition of the counties \*. "And of these to be continually in this court *twenty* SQUIRES "attendant upon the KING's person, in riding, and going at all "times, and to help serve his table from the surveying board, "and from other places, as the *Asserwar* † will assign; and

\* From hence it appears, that these officers were from the beginning gentlemen of fortune, education, and weight, in their respective places of residence.

† That is, the *Server*, whose office is to place the dishes on the table.

“ when any of them be present in court he is allowed for daily  
 “ wages in the Cheque Roll *seven pence half-penny* \* and *cloath-*  
 “ *ing* winter and summer, or else *forty shillings*. It hath ever  
 “ been in special charge to SQUIRES in this court to wear the  
 “ KING’s *Livery* constantly, for the more glory and in worship  
 “ of this honourable household: and every of them to have in  
 “ this court an honest servant, and sufficient livery in the towns  
 “ or countries for their horses, and other servants, by the *ber-*  
 “ *berger*. Two GENTLEMEN [are] *lodged together*: they be  
 “ coupled *Bed-fellows* by the Gentlemen Ushers. And if any of  
 “ these SQUIRES be sent out of court by *Steward, Treasurer,*  
 “ or *Comptroller*, or other of the *Counting-house*, for matter  
 “ touching the household, then he hath daily allowed him *twelve*  
 “ *pence* by petition. They take no part of the *general gifts*,  
 “ neither with *chamber*, nor with *hall*; but if the giver give  
 “ them specially a part, by express name or words †. None  
 “ of

\* This we have already seen was the pay of an *Esquire* in the Household. [v. the preceding Dissertation, p. 13.] but we have not observed, that at this period the pay of the Household Servants was not only calculated *by the day*; but was uniform, according to the rank of the party, without any discrimination of office. Thus when every ESQUIRE had *seven pence half-penny* per diem, every YEOMAN had *three pence*, and every GROOM *Forty Shillings* by the year, and every PAGE *twenty-six shillings* and *eight-pence* by the year. These two last, if taken *per diem*, would run into very small fractions, and therefore perhaps were generally considered in the gross. By these means however the servants were easily chequed for negligence, or non-attendance in the two first instances: for after a reprimand for the *first* offence, the loss of wages for a certain number of days was annexed to the *second*; imprisonment and sometimes corporal punishment to the *third*; and the *fourth* carried with it absolute expulsion. [See the Ordinances of king Edward IV. of the year 1478.] The intermediate title of *Gentleman*, between the *Esquire* and the *Yeoman*, was hardly then known in this official line.

† *General Gifts* at that period, I presume, meant *New Year’s Gifts*; which afterwards might extend to *fees*, and pecuniary *douceurs*, given upon *creations, homage, knighthood, &c.* now called *Fees of Honour*. As to the last of these, *Draughts*, an intrusion

“ of these should depart from court but by licence of *Steward*,  
 “ *Treasurer*, or *Sovereigns* of the *Counting-house*, that know how  
 “ the KING is accompanied best: and to take a day when they  
 “ should come again, upon pain of loss of wages at his next  
 “ coming. These *ESQUIRES* of *HOUSHOLD* of old be accus-  
 “ tomed, winter and summer, in afternoons and in evenings, to  
 “ draw to *Lords Chambers* within court, there to keep honest  
 “ company after their cunning, in talking of *Chronicles* of  
 “ *KINGS*, and of other *Policies*, or in *piping*, or *harping*, *song-*  
 “ *ings*, or other acts *marviabls*, to help to occupy the court, and  
 “ to accompany strangers till the time require departing \*.”

THE Rank of these *ESQUIRES* of *HOUSHOLD*, was, as to the younger  
 sons of *Bannerets* and *Knights Bachelors*, collateral with that of  
 the *ESQUIRES* of the *BODY*; but between themselves the supe-  
 riority rested with the former, as appears from *Coronations*,  
 where they both made a part in the procession. In the *privy-*  
*chamber*, however, the *GENTLEMEN* seem to have been rather sub-  
 ordinate even to the *Gentlemen Usbers*; for they were not only sworn  
 to obey the *Gentlemen Usbers* in all things respecting the KING's  
 service; but were called upon to take their places in case of ab-  
 sence. Thus the Orders of King Charles II. say, that “ When  
 “ no *Gentleman Usber* shall be there to wait, the eldest” (or the  
 senior) “ *GENTLEMAN* of the *PRIVY CHAMBER* in waiting shall  
 “ officiate the place in all things till one of the *Gentlemen Usbers*.

tion took place in the reign of KING PHILIP and QUEEN MARY; for I find that  
 in the year 1554, upon the making of several *Knights*, the *GENTLEMEN* of the  
*PRIVY CHAMBER* extorted a fee of 13s. 4d. “ the which,” says my authority,  
 “ was never had before.” [Bibl. Harl. N. 6064. fol. 76.] As this was the first  
 time that such Peculation was attempted, I must do the *GENTLEMEN* of the *PRIVY*  
*CHAMBER* the justice to say that it seems to have been the last.

\* KING Henry VI. had twelve *KNIGHTS* of his *Chamber*, six to be always re-  
 siding in the court, and eight *ESQUIRES* of his *Chamber*, one of which was to  
 perform the office of *Sewer* in the *CHAMBER*.

“ shall

“ shall come, both in going before Us in the Privy Lodgings and  
 “ carrying the candle in the absence of our LORD and VICE  
 “ CHAMBERLAIN.” This implies a *local* inferiority, and shews  
 that these GENTLEMEN were then an intermediate official cha-  
 racter between the *Gentlemen Ushers* and the *Grooms* \*.

KING Edward the Fourth had, besides these ESQUIRES of  
*household*, Twelve or more KNIGHTS of *household* of the degree  
 of KNIGHTS BACHELORS, four of whom attended at a time  
 upon the KING's person, whose office was provisional; viz.  
 as the Liber Niger says—“ to serve the KING of his *basin*,  
 “ or such other service as they may do the KING in absence of  
 “ the *Carvers*.” This appears to be the substance of their duty;  
 and they had *Bouche of Court*, and other allowances, with a fee  
 of *ten marks* yearly. They seem to have been of a collateral na-  
 ture with the ESQUIRES of HOUSEHOLD, though not so much  
 about the royal person, and, from their rank as *Knights*, must  
 be accounted superior officers, though their salary was not so  
 great, *ten marks* being but £. 6 13s. 4d. whereas *seven pence half*  
*penny* per diem (which we have seen was the ESQUIRE's Pay,)  
 amounts to £. 11. 8s. 1½d per Annum.

AT what period their title was changed from ESQUIRES of  
 HOUSEHOLD to that of GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER  
 does not appear; but I conceive it to have been in the reign of  
 KING HENRY the Seventh, or early in the reign of KING  
 HENRY the Eighth; for they were called ESQUIRES of HOUSEHOLD  
 Temp. Ric. III. † and in the *Eltham Statutes* (1526) GENTLE-  
 MEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER.

\* The GENTLEMEN were likewise sworn “ not to depart the distance of *twelve*  
 “ miles from the court without license of the KING or of the *Gentlemen Ushers*.”  
 Here I presume the absence of the Lord and Vice Chamberlain is implied. The  
 form of this oath, as it was administered in the first year of Queen Elizabeth, is  
 printed in the Antiquarian Repertory, Vol. II. p. 195.

† Bibl. Harl. N. 433. fol. 38.

FROM hence, Sir, we may discern, that these ESQUIRES of HOUSHOLD, afterwards called GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, were not merely ostensible characters; but had *constant* attendance upon the ROYAL PERSON in that *Chamber*, and were likewise employed in confidential offices without doors, as occasion required. They had *Wages* and *Diet*, *Livery* from the *Wardrobe* (or money by way of composition for it) and *Herbigage* for their *Horses* both in town and country. Thus is this now quiescent body in motion, and will not become stationary, till towards the close of the last century.

WHETHER the *Salaries* of these GENTLEMEN were first encreased about the reign of King Richard III. together with those of the ESQUIRES of the BODY, I will not presume to determine\*: but I find their Number reduced to 18, and their *Salaries* enlarged to £50. per Annum each, at the making of the *Eltham Statutes* Temp. Hen. VIII. (1526) where they are styled GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER. Stowe calls them, in his account of the marriage of Queen ANNE [Bulleyne], and in his description of the Coronation of King Charles I. ESQUIRES of HONOUR, which is a very warrantable as well as respectable appellation; for we retain the name of *Page* of HONOUR, at this day, to distinguish such *Pages* who attend the PERSON, from those who belong to any *particular* branch of the *houshold*.

THE *two youngest* of these GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER (for so we must henceforth call them) had indeed in the Reign of K. Henry VIII. but *Fifty marks* (or £33. 6s. 8d.): for which piece of œconomy no reason appears, unless they were *extraordinary* and added, for the purpose of completing the *rota* which consisted of SIX upon duty at a time. The intention of making the *Eltham Statutes* was a retrenchment, as well as a re-

\* See the preceding Dissertation, p. 32.

gulation. If we may be at liberty then to suppose that the number of these GENTLEMEN was found to be 48 at the accession of King Henry VIII. (for the number we have seen was "40 or more, if it pleased the King") and that the idea was to reduce them to a *third part*, the result will be *sixteen*, which, not being divisible by three, two *supernumeraries* might then be added to them to make a *rota* of Six, who were glad to accept inferior *salaries*, with a reversionary expectation. This at the same time may serve to account for the specific sum of £33. 6s. 8d. to the two youngest, it being the then salary of the ESQUIRES of the BODY.

SUCH as we find them in the Time of K. Hen. VIII. they continued to be (both as to *number* and *salary*) during the following reign. The Statutes of Eltham say, as to their duty, that *six* wait at a time, to be ready, at the KING's rising, "to apparel his *Highness*, putting on such garments in reverend, discreet, and sober manner, as it shall be his Highness's pleasure to wear." We have before observed in the preceding dissertation that the KING seems to have been loosely attired in his *Bed-chamber* by the *Esquire of the Body*, and afterwards to have in a great measure finished his dressing in his *Privy Chamber*, as will appear clearly from the Statutes of Eltham which are very full and circumstantial in these particulars, and say, "That the KING's Doublet, Hose, Shoes, or any other *Garment*, which his pleasure shall be to wear from day to day (the *Gown* only excepted) shall be honestly and cleanly brought by the *Yeoman* of the *Wardrobe* of the *Robes* to the KING's *Privy Chamber door*, without entering into the same, where one of the *Grooms* shall receive the said *Garments* and *Apparel* bringing and delivering the same to one of the said *six* GENTLEMEN to be ministered to the KING's person as shall stand with his pleasure." The exception of the *Gown* naturally creates a question not easily solvable; but

but I conjecture that it was either reserved to be put on in the *Bed-chamber* by the GROOM of the STOLE, or if it was put on at all in the *Privy-chamber*, that it was done by some person of higher degree who was present, or called upon for the purpose, as it was the custom of the times for the KING to be served in many instances, according to the language of that age, by the *greatest estate*\* present at the time. It is further ordained by these statutes, "that *two* of the said *six* GENTLEMEN shall " nightly lie on the pallet within the KING's said *Privy Cham-*  
*ber* †. That the said *six* Gentlemen shall have a vigilant and  
 " a reverend respect and eye to his MAJESTY, so that by his  
 " look or countenance they may know what he lacketh, or is  
 " his pleasure to be had or done:" and further, " That divers  
 " of them be well languaged, expert in outward parts, and  
 " meet, and able to be sent on familiar messages, or otherwise;  
 " to outward princes when the cause shall require."

SOME of these GENTLEMEN for several ages attended the King when he took a journey or went on a progress. Thus, though K. Henry VIII. went *incog.* to Rochester to visit the Princess ANNE of CLEVELAND the day before her publick reception; he took with him *eight* of these GENTLEMEN, and the whole body attended at the interview on horseback; and again, when K. CHARLES I. went to receive MARY DE MEDICIS, the mother of his Queen HENRIETTA, at *Mulham Hall*, in *Essex*, the

\* It was anciently a general rule that the KING was to be served in all things by the *greatest estate* (or person) present at the time, notwithstanding there were officers appropriated to each several duty; and that such their duty in a manner devolved upon the officer for want of persons of greater rank. This idea is not quite vanished, for when the King dines at an installation of KNIGHTS of the order of the GARTER, his MAJESTY is served by *Noblemen* in quality of *Carver*, *Cup-bearer*, and *Servant*, and not by *Gentlemen* who are officially such.

† See before, where two of the ESQUIRES of HOUSEHOLD are said to have been  
 " *coupled Bed-fellows by the Gentleman Usher.*"

seat of *Sir — Mildmay*, he was attended by several GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER \*.

THE dignity of the office of these GENTLEMEN, when sent in the KING's name, was unhappily exemplified in the case of *Cardinal WOLSEY*, who was himself the fabricator of these very statutes. The well-known story of his surrender to one of them is briefly this: The KING's commission was granted to the *Earl of Northumberland*, to arrest the *Cardinal* for High Treason; to which the *Cardinal* refused to submit himself, without seeing the KING's *Commission*, which the *Earl* declined shewing, as it contained some instructions not proper to be seen by the intended prisoner: but when *Sir Walter Walsh* entered the apartment, the *Cardinal* surrendered himself to him, saying, "You are a sufficient Commissioner in this behalf, "being *One of the Privy Chamber* †."

To return, *Sir*, to the domestic offices of these GENTLEMEN. The KING, no doubt, often conversed freely with them; for they are cautioned in the statutes of *Eltham* not to avail themselves of that condescension, by "making suits to his *Grace*, "or intermeddling in causes and matters, otherwise than they "shall be commanded, that it might appear to the King's

\* See the account of this Queen's Entrée by Mr. La Serre, printed at London, 1639, and re-printed 1775. p. 22. Mr. Puget de la Serre was Historiographer to the Queen Mother of France. [v. Le vray Estat de la France, printed at Paris 1652. p. 96.]

† Cavendish's Life of *Cardinal Wolsey*. This was the language of the times, for *Sir Robert Carey*, afterwards *Earl of Monmouth*, speaking of Mr. William Killegrew (who was one of these GENTLEMEN in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, calls him, "One of the Privy Chamber." [Memoirs, p. 102.] Lord Herbert plainly understood this mode of speaking; for he expressly makes the *Cardinal* call *Sir Walter Walsh* "GENTLEMAN of the PRIVY CHAMBER." [Life of K. Hen. VIII. p. 340.]

“honour, that he had chosen such well qualified, mannered,  
“and elect persons to be attendant on his Royal Person.”

At this period, when the attendance was so close, and the confinement so great, the *six* GENTLEMEN of the *Privy Chamber*, on duty, were dieted in the *Privy Chamber*, after the KING had withdrawn to his still more retired apartment, and were served, together with the *two* GENTLEMEN USHERS in waiting, with “*two Messes of Meat*”, well and substantially furnished, to be dressed by the cooks of the *Privy Kitchen*,” that is, the KING’s own kitchen; and the reason is given in the statutes why these Officers did not eat in common with the rest of the household, “for as much,” say they, “as it is not convenient that any time certain shall be prefixed for the KING’s going to dinner or supper.” These GENTLEMEN, from the reign of King Edward IV. (at least) till after the Restoration, served the KING’s board with meat, and were to do other services occasionally, as appears from *Liber Niger*—the *Eltham Statutes*—and the Household Ordinances of King Charles I. and King Charles II.

So rigid was the confinement of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER in their *tours* of Duty in the reign of KING Henry VIII. that they had very little relaxation from business, and none from attendance. All the indulgence permitted them was, that at such time as the KING avoided the room, they were allowed, by the statutes, to play at *Dice, Cards, Chess*, and *Tables* in the PRIVY CHAMBER, during the KING’s absence,

\* By a *Mess* of *Meat* (though with some exceptions in later times, as appears by ordinances of K. James I.) is generally meant *four* persons: so that in this case the *six* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, and the *two* GENTLEMEN USHERS would form *two Messes*. In some economical arrangements of K. James I. they ran *six* to a *Mess*, in certain cases: [v. Bibl. Harl. No. 642.] though *four* was the standard, and thus the *Messes* remain in our Inns of Court at this day.

with a caution against the intemperate use of them, and with an injunction to desist as soon as they had knowledge of the KING's approach, that they might be "reverently attendants on" on him at his entry, as to the office of good, reverend, and "humble servants doth appertain."

BEFORE I quit this reign, I would observe that six of these GENTLEMEN bore the *Canopy* at the *Christening* of KING EDWARD VI. but to prevent misconception, I would likewise observe that this does not appear to have been a right of office: for at the *Christening* of PRINCE ARTHUR (the eldest son of King Henry VII.) the *Canopy* was borne by indifferent persons who had no claim by office: and at the *Christening* of the PRINCESS MARY his daughter, it was borne by *four Bannerets* \*.

DURING the short reign of K. Edw. VI. one may suppose the household, which was left so well regulated by K. Hen. VIII. did not receive any material alteration: but upon the accession of Q. Mary it is natural to imagine the face of things would change in the interior apartments, and that a QUEEN REGENT should adopt *Ladies* in lieu of *Gentlemen* in her chamber of retirement.

AGREEABLE to this, we find that Her Majesty's board (which was always in the *Privy Chamber*) was served by LADIES and GENTLEWOMEN: the *Cup* was given by one GENTLEWOMAN, and another had the charge of the *Cupboard*: the offices of *Carvers* and *Ushers* indeed were performed by GENTLEMEN; all which appears from a MS. account left by Mr. Norris, one of her Majesty's Gentlemen Ushers †. Notwithstanding this revolution in the arrangement of the PRIVY CHAMBER, the GENTLEMEN in question were so far from being discharged, that they were preserved entire both in *number* and *salary*, there being (by

\* Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, vol. IV. p. 254.

† Of which I have a transcript.

Mr. Norris's account) always one at least of that body *in waiting*, who was either to attend the CHAMBER, or "to leave word with the *Gentleman Usher* where he shall have him, "if the Queen at any time shall call for one of them to send "any where, or any else her Highness's pleasure." The office was at this time in such high estimation, that, in the first year of the Queen, we find, among the eighteen GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, John [Dudley] duke of Northumberland, lord Robert [Dudley] his son, afterwards earl of Leicester, and William [Herbert] earl of Pembroke; and all the rest, excepting two, were knights\*. As to the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER, I shall have occasion to mention them again hereafter; but before I quit this period, I would observe that the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, in common with the *Gentlemen Ushers* of the same room, were allowed by K. Hen. VIII. annually ten yards of velvet each for a *Cloak*; and at the coronation of K. Edw. VI. they had (as had the *Gentlemen Ushers*) certain yards (the quantity is left indefinite) of crimson velvet for *Gowns*, and certain yards of tinsley (tissue) to line them†. This, I presume, was not the first, nor the last time of their having such allowances from the wardrobe, though I have as yet found no further traces of it.

It is no wonder that we do not meet with LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER antecedent to this period; for it must be considered, that QUEEN MARY was the first QUEEN REGENT that sat upon the throne. Her household was not only the same

\* See a list of Queen MARY's *household* (as it is called) in the library of your Society: though perhaps it might more properly be termed the *Household as it stood on the Queen's Accession*; because the *Duke of Northumberland* was executed within little more than a month after her *Majesty* was proclaimed QUEEN.

† This appears from a MS. account of part of the duty of a Gentleman Usher, left by Sir Richard Blount, who was in that office in the reign of K. Edw. VI.

in every respect with that of a KING, but more enlarged in this particular branch, because she preserved the GENTLEMEN, at the same time that she adopted the LADIES, of the PRIVY CHAMBER.

THIS department will be found in the same state as to its officers, both *male* and *female*, during the reign of QUEEN ELIZABETH as it had been established by her sister QUEEN MARY, which appears from a list of her household, preserved in the Harleian Library, made about the year 1593, now printed in *Peck's Desiderata Curiosa* \*.

It may not be amiss to observe here, that the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER were continued in after-reigns even by QUEEN'S CONSORT, for I meet with them on the Queen's Side in the reign of KING JAMES†, K. Cha. I. ‡, and K. Cha. II. §; and further, QUEEN HENRIETTA, on her return to England, after the Restoration, retained *four* LADIES of her PRIVY CHAMBER with salaries of 150 £. per annum each ||. In this last reign (of K. Cha. II.) I am ashamed to confess, that I find Mrs. Eleanor Gwynne (better known by the name of *Nell Gwynne*) among the LADIES of the PRIVY CHAMBER to Queen Catherine \*\*. This was bare-faced enough to be sure! Had the King made a momentary connection with a lady of that denomination, the offence might have been connived at by the Queen, but the placing one of the meanest of his creatures so near the Queen's person, was an insult that nothing could palliate but the licentiousness of the age, and the abandoned character of that lascivious monarch!

\* Vol. I. p. 59. Edit. 1779.

† Finett's Philoxenis.

‡ Household Ordinances.

§ Household Ordinances.

|| Memoirs of her Life, printed at London, 1671.

\*\* She was sworn into that post 1675, as appears from the books in the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

THE reign of KING JAMES THE FIRST seems to have proved fatal to the *Salaries* of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, and to have left them nothing but the *Honour*, except *diet* when in waiting. The king had enlarged the number from *eighteen* to *forty-eight*, and the household account of the year 1615 \* says expressly, that they had *no Fee* or *Allowance* from the KING. This revolution in disfavor of these officers may I think very properly be attributed to this period, as there was a great retrenchment in the second year of this king; it is however very clear that they had *Salaries* in the reign of QUEEN ELIZABETH, and *none* after the reign of KING JAMES. Of this indeed I have no positive evidence, though there seems to have been ample occasion for such a step, when we are told by writers of unsuspected authority, that the necessities, to which his majesty was reduced, were so great, that in the year 1606-7 (the fourth year of his reign) the officers of the *household* were so importunate and clamorous, that they stopped the *Lord High Treasurer* (the *Earl of Dorset*) in the street, and would not suffer his coach to proceed, till he had made them a promise of payment †. The Prince of Wales (Prince Henry) was in the same predicament; the *purveyors*, for want of payment, actually refusing to furnish his highness any longer with provisions, which occasioned his writing in harsh terms to the *Earl of Dorset* ‡.

THIS PRINCE had the largest household that perhaps ever was established for a PRINCE OF WALES, and amongst the rest of his officers had GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER, both *ordinary* and *extraordinary*, amounting in the gross to full an

\* In the College of Arms.

† Dr. Birch's Life of Prince Henry, 8vo. p. 83.

‡ Idem.

equal number with those of the KING ; but *they* likewise do not appear to have had any *Salary*. From these circumstances, taken together, I am induced to conclude, as has been observed, that the *salaries* were taken off early in the reign of King JAMES —from which time the office will appear to have been a post of *Honour* only.

NOTWITHSTANDING this defalcation in point of emolument, the *Duty* of these GENTLEMEN was equal to what it had been in every respect, and their attendance strongly enforced by ordinances of household of the reigns of king Charles I. and Charles II. which are still to be seen in the Lord Chamberlain's office.

IN this situation they could only be *expectants*, like the chaplains, and look for places of profit in *reversion* ; and indeed lucrative employments in the revenue departments, in embassies, &c. they seem to have had a right to fill, after they had perhaps played a losing game by close and expensive attendance for several years, accompanied with nothing but mere *Honour*, and *negative* privileges.

WE must now, Sir, proceed with our GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER at a period when they might be more properly styled, as Stowe calls them at this time, *Esquires of Honour*, having little more to boast of\*. Their number both in the reign of King Charles Ist and King Charles IId was 48. which seems to have been uniformly the established complement from the time of King James, to this day ; for as they had nothing but diet of the KING, they were not diminished in number by retrenchments, which happened afterwards. During these reigns they were called to such rigid attendance, as if their posts had been more lucrative than ever. “ The GENTLEMEN of our PRIVY CHAMBER being 48,” say the

\* King Charles I. created five of them Knights of the Bath on his coronation.  
[See Antis's Observations on the Order of the Bath, p. 78.]

Ordinances of Household of both Reigns \*, “ shall be divided to “ wait by their quarters, *twelve* in each quarter, and such of “ them as shall not accordingly wait in their quarters, shall lose “ their places, and others [be] sworn in their places by our Lord “ Chamberlain.” These Ordinances then prescribe their Duty; viz. “ That they attend diligently in our PRIVY CHAMBER, “ and expect notice of the *Gentleman Usher* in waiting when we “ are going abroad, and then to pass through the *Privy Galleries*, “ and attend us going out and coming in.” Here the line of their *Escorte* seems to have been drawn, though the attendance of the *Gentlemen Ushers* of the PRIVY CHAMBER went something farther, as will appear hereafter. The interior office of these GENTLEMEN within the *Privy Chamber* continued to be the same as it originally had been in part; viz. the bringing in the KING’s meat to the board (when he dined there) and to do other services †. Two of the *twelve in waiting* were enjoined to lodge every night in the PRIVY CHAMBER; and the names of the *two*, whose tour of duty it was to sleep there, were delivered at the beginning of every week to the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, or VICE CHAMBERLAIN, by the *Gentleman Usher*. During this reign they were employed in outward as well as domestick services, for when *Mary de Medicis* the Q. Dowager of K. Hen. IV. of France, and mother of QUEEN HENRIETTA Consort of K. Charles I. came to visit her daughter, (1639,) the King sent, among others, *several* GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER to receive her on her landing, who were to assist in conducting her to the Interview ‡. This unfortunate King was not bereft of these officers even in his imprisonment at *Holdenby-house* in Northamptonshire, though the greatest part

\* In the Lord Chamberlain’s Office.

† Household Ordinances of these Reigns.

‡ L’ Entrée of Mary de Medicis, by Mr. la Serre.

of his ordinary servants were denied him, *six* of the GENTLEMEN of his PRIVY CHAMBER being permitted to attend him, who were to officiate in various capacities, supplying (besides their own duty) the places of *Carver, Sewer, Cup-bearer, and Esquire of the Body*, by turns \*.

THE following reign differed little from the last, with regard to the parties in question. The Household of K. Charles II. had certainly been considerably enlarged at his accession; for in the year 1667, a retrenchment took place, whereby all supernumerary officers and charges, other than such as were in esse in the reign of K. Charles I. were taken away †.

THIS enlargement of the household establishment did not, however, restore the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER to their *Salaries*; for in a parchment roll of the KING's servants, made 1660 ‡, it is said, in marginal notes (which run through the whole) that they had *anciently* 50*l.* per annum, but *then* only *diet* when *in waiting*.

IT has been said, that in the reign of King Hen. VIII. these GENTLEMEN dined (together with the *Gentlemen Usbers*) in the PRIVY CHAMBER, after the King had avoided it, and had withdrawn to his interior apartments; but that was not the case at this period, and it seems to have been a discontinuance of some standing; for I find that the officers of the *Privy Chamber*, of every denomination, dined, together with several other officers, at a table called the *Waiters Table*, which was regulated by the ordinances of these two last reigns, wherein it is called a *Ratification of ancient Orders*. This mode was, I think, most probably adopted on the accession of QUEEN MARY, when she intro-

\* Peck's *Desiderata Curiosa*, Vol. II. p. 372. Edit. 1779.

† Lord Chamberlain's Office-books.

‡ In the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

duced LADIES of her PRIVY CHAMBER. It is to be observed here, that *eight* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER only were permitted to dine at this *Table*, though *twelve* were enjoined to be every day *in waiting*, which I conceive must have been the effect of the retronchment we have mentioned 1667; for these orders of household were evidently made after the year 1668, as they include officers, whose places were not erected till that year. The Ordinances of K. Charles II. were only an enlarged edition of those of his father K. Charles I.; and though it was *auſtior*, yet I cannot say it was *emendatior* with regard to the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER: but the decisive blow, which reduced these GENTLEMEN to their present post of HONOUR only, was most probably the very great reduction in almost every branch of the royal household, which took place in the reign of K. James II. immediately after the demise of K. Charles II. There was scarce an office (collectively speaking) however humble, that did not suffer at that time either in *number* (whereby the duty to the survivors was increased) or in *emoluments*, and sometimes in both; and many branches were entirely cut off. At this period, therefore, it is most probable, that the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER lost even the little privilege of the *table*; but whether their *Duty* ceased at that time I have not been able to discern, though it is most natural to imagine that their *diurnal* and *nocturnal* offices fell together.

SINCE the Accession of the *House of Hanover*, the GENTLEMEN do not seem to have been drawn forth into office (further than has been shewn) except *once* at the *Revival* of the ORDER OF THE BATH, on which occasion, when the KNIGHTS attended the KING to the *Chapel Royal* on *Easter Sunday* (1726) the Procession was led by the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER.

BER \*. This, however, was but a revocation to an *ancient Branch* of their *Duty*; for it appears from Ceremonials preserved in the College of Arms, that formerly they *always* made a part of the Procession to the *Chapel Royal* on *Sundays* and *Festivals* †. If necessary we might go farther back; for, in an account of the marriage of the *Princess Mary* daughter of K. Cha. I. with the son of *Frederick-Henry* PRINCE of ORANGE (1641), the procession of the KING to the chapel was led “according to the manner observed upon *Festivals*” by GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER ‡.

WHETHER there is any CHAMBER in *foreign Courts* under this particular appellation, I am not competent to say; though there seems to have been in some of them an apartment of a *private* nature, similar to our *ancient* PRIVY CHAMBER: for Mr. Roger Ascham, who was secretary to Sir Richard Morison, Ambassador to the EMPEROR CHARLES V, tells us in a letter, dated 1551, that he first saw the EMPEROR in his PRIVY CHAMBER. [v. Ascham's Works, published by Bennett, p. 375.] and again, when Mr. Ascham saw the PRINCE of SPAIN, he says, it was in his PRIVY CHAMBER. [Idem. p. 385.] This chamber, under whatever title it went, answered to Mr. Ascham's idea of our PRIVY CHAMBER, and was, doubtless, a retired apartment.

THERE seems, however, to have been a very similar establishment in France, probably founded on our own, under the denomination of “GENTLEMEN *in ordinary* of the KING's HOUSEHOLD,” who, if I can rely upon my authority, were at first 48 in number, though they were afterwards reduced to 26. They appear to have been instituted by K. Henry III. and

\* The number is left indefinite in the Ceremonial.

† See the Chapter Books in Off. Arm. sub annis 1673 & 1686.

‡ Addenda to Leland's Collectanea, Vol. V. p. 345.

consequently

consequently are of a modern date : for that King ascended the throne of France 1574, and was a co-temporary with our Q. Elizabeth. The following are the leading features of their resemblance to our GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER—They were to keep near the KING's *Person*, to receive his commands.—They were sent on sundry occasions, not only into the provinces of France, with the KING's orders, but were sometimes employed in negotiations with foreign princes.—They likewise carried the KING's compliments of *Congratulation* or *Condolence*, &c. &c. I give this account on the faith of a *Gallia Notitia*, or *Present State of France*, translated from the French by R. Wolley \*, A. M. and licensed for the press in 1686-7, though not printed till 1691.

THIS, Sir, is all I have to offer on the *Nature* and *Duty*, &c. of these GENTLEMEN, now in such great measure unemployed; but I shall beg leave to trouble you with a few words on the PRIVY CHAMBER *itself* (to which I have the honour humbly to belong) so often mentioned in this and the preceding memoir.

THIS CHAMBER is always styled HONOURABLE, but properly should be called, as it is at present, MOST HONOURABLE †. The situation of it is (interiorly speaking) next beyond the *Presence chamber*,

\* It appears from the dedication, that Mr. Wolley resided several years in France, in the family of Richard [Graham] Viscount Preston, to whom the translation is inscribed; so that the work seems to have been prepared for the press before the Viscount's attainder (1690), though published afterwards.

† See before, p. 46. From this *Title* annexed to the *Apartment*, some GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER have been misled to imagine they have a right to be styled HONOURABLE in their address; but there seems to be no ground for the presumption. They are not so termed in their Warrants and Certificates. It is the HONOURABLE HOUSE OF COMMONS, collectively speaking; but every member

chamber, communicating with the state *Bed chamber* through an intermediate room, the proper name of which is the *Withdrawing room*; for what we now call the *Drawing room* is a nouvelle affaire—and the room made use of for the purpose is, properly speaking, the *great Council chamber*. By this transfer, the original idea of a *withdrawing room* is lost, and the intention totally reversed, in as much as that room, which by its name implied an apartment of still greater *retirement* than even the *Privy chamber*, is now become in fact the *Chamber of Presence*, and the *Council room* is used for the purpose, merely, I apprehend, on account of its amplitude. But let us observe what was the etiquette of the *Withdrawing room*—even so lately as in the time of King Charles I. It appears from the Ordinances of that Reign above cited, that the QUEEN'S *Withdrawing room* was kept so sacredly private, that no *Countess* or other *Lady* could come into it without asking leave—and even the Officers of the PRIVY CHAMBER had not the *entrée*, except it were to deliver a message to the *Lord* or *Vice chamberlain*, or to the QUEEN in their absence \*.

THE *Drawing-rooms*, as we now call them, were introduced on the accession of KING GEORGE II. and QUEEN CAROLINE, and during the QUEEN'S life were held every evening, when all persons, properly dressed, were admissible, and the Royal Family played at cards. After the demise of the QUEEN, they were continued but twice in a week, and in a few years the evening

ber of it has not *individually* a right to that *affix* to his name. I incline to think, and upon good foundation, that these GENTLEMEN have been drawn into the idea by *The Present State of Great Britain* published by John Chamberlayne, Esq. (1708), who says that King Henry VII. gave them this *title*—but the errors and crudities of that and the rest of those compilations are innumerable.

\* Household Ordinances of the year 1627.

*Drawing-rooms* were laid aside, and the King kept his state in a morning twice every week as at present.

*Levées* are likewise of modern date ; for antiently the King saw his courtiers—the ambassadors &c. for the most part in his PRESENCE CHAMBER, the room next *without* the PRIVY CHAMBER. In this chamber (of *Presence*) the King occasionally dined in state, during which, no person, not warranted by his office, was permitted even to set his foot upon the *haut-pas* \*. On ordinary occasions the King dined in his PRIVY CHAMBER, attended by the officers of that room ; and afterwards, when he chose to be still more private, retired to the *Withdrawing-room* situate as we have said, between the *Privy chamber* and the *Bed chamber*. This room was considered as a branch of the *Bed chamber* which had its own officers, the *Gentlemen* (now called the *Lords*), the *Grooms*, and the *Pages* of the *Bed chamber*, and the corresponding room at St. James's is called the *little Drawing room* to this day.

To return to the PRIVY CHAMBER. The Eltham Statutes, so often mentioned, sufficiently shew how sacred this room was kept in the reign of King Henry VIII. for they expressly prohibited any access to the KING in his PRIVY CHAMBER by persons not particularly named : for, say they, “ no person of  
“ what estate, degree, or condition so ever he be, shall from  
“ henceforth presume to attempt, or be in any wise suffered or  
“ admitted to come, or repair into the KING's PRIVY CHAM-  
“ BER, other than such as his Grace shall from time to time  
“ call for, or command, except only the ministers now deput-  
“ ed, or in lieu of them hereafter to be deputed for attendance  
“ in the same.” The *six* GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER together with the other officers appertaining to that

\* Ordinances of King Charles II.

room are likewise excepted. The privacy of this room may, *primâ facie*, seem to have been destroyed by the number of officers on continual duty in it, viz. the *six GENTLEMEN* and the *two Gentlemen Ushers*, besides the *Grooms* and the *Page*: but it is to be observed that they were sworn "not to disclose any secret concerning the Royal Person or State, that they may hear within the *Privy Chamber* \*;" they were also cautioned, and I presume solemnly, "to keep secret all such things as shall be done or said in the *Privy-Chamber* †."

AFTER the Restoration, the etiquette of the *PRIVY CHAMBER* was more relaxed; and many persons were admitted *ex officio* who at that period, from the complexion of the times, were found necessary. The business of the state had encreased, the military were in higher estimation, and it was proper to countenance many gentlemen of rank and consequence, though not of quality, who had been friends to the King during his exile: but, at the same time, not to trouble you with the words themselves, the ordinances of this reign exclude all "unknown persons." At this time the King kept his court at *Whitehall*. The disposition of the rooms in all our royal palaces is at present as nearly as possible the same, leading in a suite through the *Guard Chamber*, (or more properly speaking the *Great Chamber*), to the *Presence Chamber*; from thence to the *Privy Chamber*, and then through the *Withdrawing Room* to the *Bed Chamber*; but there was at *Whitehall* two peculiar branches of the *Privy Chamber* necessary to be mentioned, viz. the *PRIVY GALLERY*, and the *PRIVY GARDEN* ‡. The

PRIVY

\* The words of the Oath Temp. Eliz. R. left by Drue Drury, a *Gentleman Usher* of that time, printed in the *Antiquarian Repertory*, Vol. II. p. 195.

† *Eltham Statutes*.

‡ There was, in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, a *Privy Garden* at the Tower, [v. a draught of the Tower Liberties made from a survey 1597, from which

**PRIVY GALLERY**, as may be collected from the Ordinances of King Charles II. led over the arch of *Holben's Gate* from whence there was a descent by steps immediately into the Park \*. Part of this *Gallery* was accounted as **PRIVY CHAMBER**, which part is described in these Ordinances to be the space between "the second door from the Park, at the passage over the street, to the door of the Ante-Room to the Bed Chamber [which " was] towards the water side." At this second door within the **GALLERY** was a *Gallery Keeper*, to let in such persons as were qualified to enter, and to exclude all others at his peril.

THE *Privy Garden* was likewise accounted as **PRIVY CHAMBER**; for the Ordinances of King Charles II. expressly say, "That the *Privy Garden* be observed in all particulars as " our **PRIVY LODGINGS**, concerning the service to be performed there by the *Gentlemen Ushers* of our **PRIVY CHAMBER**." A *Gentleman Usher* attended the King when he walked in this *Garden*—not so the **GENTLEMEN** of the **PRIVY CHAMBER**, their duty extending no farther than the domestic limits of the **PRIVY CHAMBER**, as they only attended the KING at his going out and coming in †.

an engraving has been published by your Society.] The Queen had likewise both a *Privy Gallery* and a *Privy Garden* at Nonfuch [of which see a description in your *Archæologia*, Vol. V. p. 429.] There is, or was, likewise a *Privy Garden* at Hampton Court. [See *Bibliotheca Topographica Britannica* published by John Nichols 1781. No. II. p. 46.]

\* A beautiful engraving of this Gate has been happily preserved by your Society. When it was taken down (anno 1759) in order to widen the street, the materials were carried to Windsor Great Lodge at the request of his late Royal Highness WILLIAM Duke of Cumberland, who intended to have re-created it as a termination of the *Long Walk*; but his Highness's death prevented it. The situation of this Gate, as it remained, after the fire which in the year 1697 destroyed all the State Apartments except the Banqueting house, may be seen, by those who do not remember it, in a print (engraved from an original drawing) in the *Antiquarian Repertory*, Vol. I. facing p. 85.

† See before, p. 61.

ONE word more, Sir, will shew the particular attention, even in fore-sight, that was paid to this *Chamber* by the above cited Ordinances of King Charles II. as they provide for a possible case, whether in a *Villa* belonging to the KING, or at the *Seat* of a *Nobleman* whom the KING might honour with a visit; for, say they, “ in all houses, where *one Chamber* is for our “ PRESENCE, and PRIVY CHAMBER, the said *Chamber* shall be “ avoided, and become the PRIVY CHAMBER, after warning “ given to cover the table there for our meals, and also at other “ times, when our pleasure shall be to have the same *private*.”

FROM what has been said, Sir, we may discern that the employment of the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER was of a mixt nature—they being originally *confidential Servants* to the KING—useful to him as *Gentlemen of education*, properly qualified to be sent on embassies &c. and *Guardians of his Person* by NIGHT, as two of them slept in an apartment nearly adjoining to the Royal *Bed Chamber*: their *personal Authority* was singularly decisive when exercised in the KING’s name—their service *honourable* in itself, and *ornamental* to the COURT.

I have the honour, Sir, to subscribe myself

your very obedient

humble servant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

APPENDIX.

## A P P E N D I X.

N<sup>o</sup> I.

EXTRACT from the LONDON GAZETTE of April 30, 1763.

WHITEHALL, April 18.

**T**HIS day their *Excellencies* M. \* QUERINI and M. \* MOROSINI *Ambassadors Extraordinary from the most Serene REPUBLIC of VENICE* made their *public Entry*: they were received at Greenwich by *the Right Honourable the EARL OF GUILFORD* †, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Master of the Ceremonies*, accompanied by *six GENTLEMEN OF HIS MAJESTY'S PRIVY CHAMBER*, and from thence brought by water in his MAJESTY'S *Barges* to the Tower. *The Right Honourable LORD BERKELEY OF STRATTON, Constable of the Tower*, received their *Excellencies* at their landing, the *Standard* was displayed, and the *Guard* being drawn out upon the wharf, saluted their *Excellencies* as they passed by: when the coaches were got off the wharf, the *Guns* fired. The *Procession* began by *six* of the *Knights Marshal's men on horseback*; then the conducting *Earl's*

\* By these Initials I presume the Title of MONSIGNOR is intended.

† Not *ex officio*—but appointed for the purpose; and possibly (though I speak diffidently) because the Rank of an EARL might quadrate with the SENATORIAL DIGNITY of the AMBASSADORS. Their *Excellencies* were likewise received by an EARL on their *public Audience*, [v. Postea.]

Coach, in which went *Stephen Cottrell, Esq. Marshal of the Ceremonies*; then followed *forty* of their EXCELLENCIES *Footmen*, in very rich liveries, *two and two*, after them *eight Gentlemen* of the [their] *Bed Chamber* on horseback *two and two*; then the *House Steward* on horseback; then *eight Pages, two and two*, on horseback; then the *Under Gentlemen of the Horse*; then their Excellencies *Band of Music*, on horseback; then came the *First GENTLEMAN OF THE HORSE*, immediately preceding his MAJESTY'S *State Coach*, in which went THEIR EXCELLENCIES, the *Right Honourable the EARL of GUILFORD*, and *SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. Master of the Ceremonies*; then followed one of his MAJESTY'S *leading coaches* \* with the *two Secretaries* of the EMBASSY in it; then one of the QUEEN'S *leading coaches*; and after these a *leading coach* of her Royal Highness the *Princess Dowager of WALES*—of his Royal Highness the *Duke of YORK*—of her Royal Highness the *Princess AUGUSTA*—of his Royal Highness the *Duke of CUMBERLAND*—and of her Royal Highness the *Princess AMELIA*—each drawn by *six* horses.

IN these coaches went the GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER *two and two*; these were followed by the *State Coach* of the *most Serene REPUBLICK of VENICE*, very richly ornamented and drawn by *eight* horses, and *two* more very rich *Coaches* of their EXCELLENCIES, drawn by *six* horses each, in the last of which went *Two Noble Venetians* of their EXCELLENCIES suite; a numerous train of coaches of the *Nobility* each drawn by *six* horses closed the procession.

WHEN their EXCELLENCIES were arrived at *Somerset-House*, they were complimented on the part of his MAJESTY by the *Right Honourable LORD BEAULIEU*: from the QUEEN, by the *Right*

\* By *leading coaches* is to be understood those commonly used for the conveyance of the Retinue of the several branches of the Royal Family respectively, as distinguished from the STATE COACHES.

*Honourable* LORD VISCOUNT CANTALUPE, her MAJESTY'S *Vice Chamberlain*: from her Royal Highness the PRINCESS DOWAGER OF WALES, by *William Wentworth, Esq.* her Royal Highness's *Vice Chamberlain* \*: from his Royal Highness the DUKE of YORK by the *Honourable George West, Esq.* one of his Royal Highness's Grooms of the Bed Chamber: from her Royal Highness PRINCESS AUGUSTA, by *William Egerton, Esq.* her Royal Highness's *Gentleman Usher* †: from his Royal Highness the DUKE of CUMBERLAND by the *Honourable General Fitz-William* one of his Royal Highness's Grooms of the Bed Chamber, and from her Royal Highness PRINCESS AMELIA, by — *Stephens, Esq.* one of her Royal Highness's *Gentlemen Ushers*.

---

St. James's, April 21.

THIS day their *Excellencies* M. QUERINI and M. MOROSINI, *Ambassadors Extraordinary from the most Serene* REPUBLIC of VENICE, were brought to their *publick Audience* of his MAJESTY, by the *Right Honourable* THE EARL of SUSSEX †, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Master of the Ceremonies*, attended by six GENTLEMEN of the PRIVY CHAMBER, from *Somerset-house*, where they had been, as usual, entertained by his MAJESTY for three

\* This I apprehend to be a gross mistake; for though Her ROYAL HIGHNESS had a *Chamberlain* (the *Right Honourable Lord Boston*) yet she never had a *Vice Chamberlain*; for want of which Officer, the duty, on this occasion, in the absence of the *Chamberlain*, devolved upon Mr. *Wentworth*, either as senior *Gentleman Usher* of her Royal Highness's *Privy Chamber*, or as the *Gentleman Usher* of that Department in waiting.

† This is likewise erroneous; for it should run—one of the *Gentlemen Ushers* *Quarterly Waiters* belonging to Her Royal Highness the PRINCESS DOWAGER of WALES deputed to attend on the part of Her Royal Highness the PRINCESS AUGUSTA.

‡ A particular appointment.

days. The Procession and ranging of the Coaches was exactly the same as at the *Entry*. Their *Excellencies* were received at the *Court Gate* by SIR SYDNEY MEADOWS, *Knight-Marshal*. The *Foot Guards* upon duty were drawn up in the court, and their Officers saluted their *Excellencies* with *Pike, Drum, and Colours*, pulling off their hats as they passed by. Their *Excellencies* were conducted to the *Little Council Chamber* to rest themselves till his MAJESTY was ready; and then having notice sent by a *Gentleman-Usher*, they set forward, having the *Right Honourable the EARL OF SUSSEX* on their *right hand*, and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Master of the Ceremonies*, on their *left*. They were received at the *Guard-Chamber Door* by the *Right Honourable LORD VISCOUNT FALMOUTH, Captain of the Yeomen of the Guard*: at the *Drawing-Room Door*\* by the *Right Honourable the EARL OF LICHFIELD, Captain of the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners*, who were ranged on each side in the *Great Council Chamber* (the Room where his Majesty gave them Audience), at the door of which their *Excellencies* were received by his Grace the DUKE OF MARLBOROUGH, *Lord Chamberlain of his Majesty's Household*. His *Excellency* M. MOROSINI then made an Harangue to his MAJESTY in *Italian*, which his MAJESTY having answered in *English*, their EXCELLENCIES again retired to the *Little Council Chamber*, till Her MAJESTY was ready to receive them, of which having notice by a *Gentleman-Usher*, they went to the QUEEN's side, and were received at the door of Her MAJESTY's *Guard-Chamber*, by the *Right Honourable LORD VISCOUNT CANTALUBE* her MAJESTY's *Vice Chamberlain*, and at the door of the *Room of Audience*, by the *Right Honourable the EARL OF HARCOURT*, her MAJESTY's *Lord Chamberlain*, and so conducted up to Her MAJESTY by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, the EARL OF SUSSEX,

\* Meaning the door of the *Great Council Chamber*, commonly called the *Drawing-Room*.

and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, KNT. *Master of the Ceremonies*. The Audience over, their EXCELLENCIES were re-conducted by the EARL OF SUSSEX and SIR CHARLES COTTRELL DORMER, to their own house in the same state as they came.

THEIR EXCELLENCIES had Audience of Leave of His MAJESTY on the 13th day of May following, in the usual form, and were received in the closet, when the King conferred the *Honour of Knighthood* on M. QUERINI, and presented him with the rich *Sword* mentioned in the preceding Memoir.

A P P E N D I X.

N<sup>o</sup>. II.

EXTRACT from the LONDON GAZETTE of January 17, 1761.

At the Court at St. JAMES's, the 13th day of January, 1761.

P R E S E N T,

The KING's most Excellent MAJESTY in Council.

WHEREAS His MAJESTY's *Royal Predecessors* were pleased, from time to time, by their respective *Orders made in Council*, to declare and signify their pleasure, that their *Servants* should have and enjoy all *antient Liberties, Rights and Privileges*; and that none of their *Servants in ordinary, with Fee*, should be inforced or obliged to bear any *Public Office*, serve on *Juries* or *Inquests*, or be subjected unto any mulct or fine for not submitting thereunto; His MAJESTY this day taking the same into consideration; and thinking it reasonable that all his *Servants in ordinary, with Fee*, should in regard of their constant attendance upon His MAJESTY's PERSON, enjoy the like *Privileges* with those of his *Predecessors*, doth therefore hereby order, with the advice of his *Privy Council*, that the LORD CHAMBERLAIN of his MAJESTY's *Household*, in relation to such of his MAJESTY's *servants*, who are under his Grace's \* Command

\* The Duke of Marlborough.

*above stairs*; and the LORD STEWARD of His MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, and in his abſence, His MAJESTY's *Officers* of the *Green Cloth*, as to ſuch as are accounted *Officers below ſtairs*; and the MASTER of the HORSE for the Servants belonging to the *Stables*, do reſpectively ſignify unto the LORD MAYOR of LONDON and to his MAJESTY's *Juſtices* of the *Peace* within the City of WESTMINSTER, *Counties* of SURREY and MIDDLESEX, and to the *Mayors*, *Sheriffs* and *Bailiffs* of any *Corporation* or *County*, and to all ſuch as may be therein concerned, whenſoever there ſhall be cauſe for aſſerting the ſaid *Privilege*; that His MAJESTY hath thought proper, conformable to the example of his *Predeceſſors* in this behalf, to order and require, that his *Servants* ſhould have, hold, and enjoy all the ſaid *Liberties*, *Rights*, and *Privileges*; and that henceforward none of his *Servants in Ordinary*, *with Fee*, be enforced, or any ways obliged to bear any *public Offices*, ſerve on *Juries* or *Inqueſts*, *Watch* or *Ward*, in any place where they dwell, or elſewhere, nor ſubject to any mulct or fine for not ſubmitting thereunto; and the LORD CHAMBERLAIN of his MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, for thoſe Servants *above ſtairs*; the LORD STEWARD of his MAJESTY's *Houſhold*, and in his abſence His MAJESTY's *Officers* of the *Greencloth* for the Servants *below ſtairs*; and the MASTER of the HORSE for the Servants belonging to the *Stables*, are hereby authorized and required to take ſpecial care, that this His MAJESTY's pleaſure be duly obſerved and put in execution; and that His MAJESTY's *Attorney General*, for the time being, be, and he is hereby *authorized* and *required*, upon any application made to him by any of His MAJESTY's *Servants in Ordinary*, *with Fee*, to cauſe a ſtop to be put to all proceedings already had, or to be commenced againſt them or any of them, for reſuſing to *watch*, or ſerve on *Juries*, or bear or undergo any *public Office* or *Employment* above-mentioned: and

L

His

His MAJESTY doth hereby further order, that Copies of this Order be left with the respective *Clerks* of the *Peace* of the *Cities* of LONDON and WESTMINSTER, and *Counties* of MIDDLESEX and SURREY, to be kept amongst the Records of His MAJESTY's Sessions, to the intent that due obedience may be given thereunto, and his *Servants* may not be vexed with unreasonable proceedings.

W. BLAIR.

END of PART the FIRST.

C U R I A L I A:  
O R  
*A N H I S T O R I C A L A C C O U N T*  
O F  
S O M E B R A N C H E S  
O F T H E  
R O Y A L H O U S H O L D, &c. &c.  
P A R T I I.

C O N T A I N I N G

A M E M O I R,

A D D R E S S E D T O T H E

President of the Society of Antiquaries, London;

*R E G A R D I N G* *the* K I N G ' S H O N O U R A B L E B A N D O F  
G E N T L E M E N P E N S I O N E R S,

F R O M I T S E S T A B L I S H M E N T T O T H E P R E S E N T T I M E.

*By* S A M U E L P E G G E, E S Q.

---

L O N D O N,

Printed by J NICHOLS, Printer to the SOCIETY of ANTIQUARIES;  
And sold by T. PAYNE and Son, Mews Gate; B. WHITE and Son,  
at Horace's Head, in Fleet-street; J. ROBSON, New Bond-street;  
and LEIGH and SOTHEBY, York-street, Covent-Garden.

M D C C L X X I V.



## I N T R O D U C T I O N

T O

## P A R T II.

**T**HE primary intention of this Work went no farther than to develop the nature of a few Branches of the Royal Establishment, which were either totally worn out; or to shew what some of them, now in an evanescent state, formerly were: but in the course of such researches I found myself led on insensibly to what may in some measure ultimately amount to an œconomical History of the Royal Household. The subject of the first Dissertation (the *Esquires of the Body*) is entirely vanished, and that of the second (the *Gentlemen of the Privy-Chamber*) is little less so, except in name. Many, however, of the Offices which remain differ so widely from the original design of their institution, that such traces of them as can be found in their ancient state may not be unacceptable to some readers. If I should intrude too long with what immediately follows, or with other seemingly unimportant subjects, it is because no writer has hitherto gone into them at large—and because they contain remanents of Antiquity not totally unworthy of being redeemed from oblivion. I consider myself in the light of an Artist clean-

ing a large decayed original Picture, wherein a noble Group of Figures, and a rich extensive Back-ground may be discovered, unless they be more obscured by the unskilfulness of the Operator.

In a Work of this sort, where the information is of so desultory a nature, it is almost impossible to pursue any plan which will confine the subjects I have to offer within a regular series : I am therefore under a necessity of keeping them detached, for want of Muniments which occur sometimes very sparingly. It is at best but building with mere scantlings, of which when a few are found, one does not know where to seek for more ; and even those, in actual possession, will not always suit the purpose for want of being perfect :—but I have the honour to address myself to a learned Society, many Members of which are sensible how difficult it is to form a structure with materials so widely dispersed. I can defer but very little to printed authorities—few, indeed, are to be had ; when at the same time Manuscripts on such subjects are seldom preserved, and those which are, cannot easily be found, though I am bound to acknowledge I have met with every possible indulgence in the search for them. I trust, however, that all I have said, or may hereafter throw out upon these topics, will have authority, a *Fides Attica*, sufficient to support itself ; and I had much rather say too little upon good grounds than hazard any thing upon a doubtful bottom.

I beg it may be understood that in these Disquisitions I do not aim at innovation, or the restoration of ancient Customs ;—neither would I be thought to insinuate any comparative ideas between the present and former state of things ;—but, above all, I should be very sorry to give the slightest offence to any Gentleman, or Body of Gentlemen, in the Royal Household, and more especially to the Sovereign ; the design extending no further than merely to shew (as has been suggested) what were the Manners of the Court in remoter ages, and the primary nature of Of-  
fices

fices and Employments in the Regal Establishment, which are now so much altered in their complexion and features by Time, and by change of Habitudes. In the course of such investigations, however, I must be excused if it should transpire that some Offices originally menial in their nature, have been emancipated, and are become respectable ; while others, at first honourable, have sunk into obscurity—the effect of adventitious circumstances rather than the conduct of individuals.

To justify this Research, we may observe, that there is in Mankind an almost innate desire to be acquainted with, and an inclination to revere, in some degree, the Manners of their Ancestors, which extends even to their Pastimes and Pleasures : and if such curiosity prompts us to enquire into the ancient modes of living, and the private œconomy of our own family connections, there is a still stronger impulse which urges us to view, as a more enlarged prospect, the interior domestic lives of our former Kings, their Establishments, their Courts, and such Ceremonies as differ from those of the present age. These we naturally compare with our own times, and even admire for their rudeness and simplicity, while at the same moment we congratulate ourselves as living at a period of greater refinement. A modern French author\* has a passage very apposite to this idea, —“ De toutes les parties de notre histoire,” says he, “ il n’en est pas de plus intéressante que celle qui nous retrace les mœurs et les usages de nos Peres. Ce sont, pour ainsi dire, de ces vieux portraits de famille, sur lesquels on se plaît toujours à jeter les yeux. La *Gothicité* du costume, l’habillement bizarre, le maintien roide et empesé des personages qu’ils repre-

\* Monf. de St. Palaye. *Memoires sur l’ancienne Chevalerie*. Tom. III. in Preface. Paris. Duodecimo, 1781.

“ sentent,

“ sentent, nous paroissent tout-à-fait plaisans, et nous ne pouvons nous empêcher de sourire du mauvais gout de nos ancêtres.”

The French writers have gone at large into minute details respecting their own Establishments, and there is scarcely a Ceremony, or even an Office in the Court of France, that has not been handled by them even to prolixity: for the sake of brevity I refer to Mr. du Tillet,—Pere Daniel de la milice Française--- Mr. Godefroye, &c. &c.

A Sovereign of our own times would find the State and Ceremony of former ages an incumbrance hardly to be endured; it would be like reverting to the days of Chivalry, when no person of rank could appear without being buckled up in a Suit of Armour.

Every Century has felt a comparative enjoyment of its luxuries, there having perhaps always been something in each succeeding age more refined than in the last, and every period, I doubt not, has exulted in such improvements; while any given æra has been perfectly happy in the possession of its own, without a presentiment of superior indulgencies. Our Ancestors fared as voluptuously in their Diet as any of their successors have done, according to the taste of the times;—their Tables were plentifully, though not, as we should now call it, elegantly furnished; and they had their Rarities and far-fetched Dainties. Their style of Cookery varied from ours as much as the Cut of their Cloaths, and the ingredients used in it as much as the materials of which their Cloaths consisted: yet were their Dishes and their Dress equally sumptuous. Who now hears of Cloth of Gold, or who eats Cranes and Porpoises?—and yet these last were accounted princely Viands\*. Thus has luxury been the same in all ages, differing only in its modes and qualities.

\* See the Forme of Cury or Roll of Cookery of the year 1390. A private impression, by Gustavus Brander, Esq.—Sibi et amicis.

State and Parade, the natural and proper appendages of Courts, have likewise relaxed with the times, and been decaying for more than a century, and it is only to be lamented that Dignity has fallen with them. From hence it arises, that every trace of antient splendour becomes of some value, and an object of record;—hereby an old *Custom* is rendered equal in estimation with an old *Coin*,---the vestiges of a *Court* with those of a *Convent*---and the *Manners* of mankind, when living, as worthy of preservation as their *Monuments* when dead. There are a few, and but a few, who may know, by recollection or by oral tradition, how the Fashions and Etiquette of the Court have varied for nearly a century: but those few can tell us little of what they were *two* centuries ago, which is only to be discovered from very diffusive evidence, and by an acquaintance with what has been called “Such reading as was never read.”

As to the subject which immediately follows, it requires the less excuse after the learned Jesuit, Father Daniel, has condescended to give us the History of the *Gentilhommes du Bec de Corbin* (its prototype) in the French Establishment. Some similar account of the Yeomen of the Guard will be brought forward speedily, which *Corps*, being likewise of French extraction, has a claim to its place, as the *Pendant* or *Companion* of the BAND OF PENSIONERS; these two being, *at present*, the only interior Body Guards of the Person of the Sovereign\*.

How far I may succeed in collecting and arranging the matter which is comprehended in the following parts of this Work, is left to the candour of the public to determine; and these few words must operate as an Apology for all the Publications on the subject, which I may hereafter take the liberty of obtruding upon the World.

\* The *Serjeants at Arms* were the original *Garde du Corps* of our Kings, an account of whom will form a subsequent Part of these Investigations.



[ 1 ]

# C U R I A L I A:

O R,

AN HISTORICAL ACCOUNT, &c.

P A R T II.

---

A · M E M O I R

*Regarding the KING's Honourable BAND*

O F

G E N T L E M E N P E N S I O N E R S,

From its Establishment to the present Time\*.

*To the President of the Society of Antiquaries, London.*

S I R,

**T**HIS demi-military Corps is more pregnant with history than one would imagine from its modern appearance, which differs exceedingly in complexion from what it was at its Institution. The face of it has changed, not only with the fashions of the times; but, according to some writers, with the exigencies of the Court; and though an insight into its Esta-

\* Read at the Society of Antiquaries, March 21, 1782.

A

blishment

blishment and Revolutions may be of no importance to national history; yet, in a work of this sort, it may be found to deserve some attention, as having once been *the most splendid Branch of the ROYAL ESCORTE.*

I am justified in calling it *semi-military*, because it was originally composed of *Cadets of noble Families*, and of the higher *Order of Gentry*, who were afterwards transplanted, for the most part, into the army.

The time of the Establishment of *The Band of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS* (as we now style it) has been generally mis-attributed, some appropriating it to the Reign of King Henry VII.\*, and others to that of Queen Elizabeth †; but the truth will be found in the Reign of King Henry VIII. and not long after his Accession to the Throne ‡. His father had instituted at his Coronation (1485) a body of *fifty Archers*, under the title of *Yeomen of his Guard*; but the young and spirited King Henry VIII. was too high-minded to be contented with an Escorte of *Yeomen*, and therefore erected this new and sumptuous Troop of GENTLEMEN, to attend his person and service.||.

One

\* Vide postea, in a Case stated by the *Pensioners themselves* at the Revolution.

† See Chamberlayne's *Present States*—the Court Registers from time to time, —and Trusler's *Chronology*.

‡ All the Chroniclers agree, that it took place in the first year of King Henry VIII. (1509), previous to his Coronation.

|| Lloyd, in his *Worthies* [Observations on the Life of Thomas Howard, Earl of Surry] says, "the Band was established at the instance of Sir William Compton." This Gentleman, who was a lineal ancestor of the Earls of Northampton, is well known to have been high in the Royal favour, and after having served as *Page of Honour*, and *Groom of the Bed-chamber* successively to the King when Duke of York, was, on the King's accession, immediately made a *Gen- tleman of the Bed-chamber*, *Groom of the Stole*, and soon afterwards knighted. Besides these Offices in the first instance, the King conferred upon him several Manors, and honoured him with part of the Royal Arms, in augmentation of his

One would expect the most accurate account of this institution from Hall (the chronicler), who lived nearest the time of its being founded; but he will prove to be incorrect, and to have been implicitly followed by Lord Herbert, Holingshed, Stowe, &c\*.

All these writers fix the date of the establishment, A. D. 1509, the first year of King Henry VIII. to which we may safely accede. They likewise tell us, that the corps was disbanded very soon, on account of the expence; and that it was not revived till the 30th year of King Henry's reign, 1539†: though this last circumstance is not only controvertible matter, but will be found to be absolutely fallacious. As Hall's account is short, and the other writers give it in *totidem verbis*, I shall trouble you with it, and then proceed to give you other authorities. "This *Band*," says he, "consisted of FIFTY GENTLE-  
" MEN to be SPEARS, every of them to have an *Archer*, a *Demi-*  
" *lance*, and a *Coustrill*‡, and every SPEAR to have *three Great*  
" *Horses*, to be attendant on his person; of the which *Band* the  
" *Earl of Essex* was CAPTAIN, and *Sir John Peachy* LIEUTE-  
" NANT. This ordinance continued but a while, the charges  
" were so great; for there were none of them, but they and  
" their horses were apparelled and trapped in *Cloth of gold*, silver,  
" and goldsmiths-work§." Thus it should seem that the corps

own. [Dugdale's Baronage.] From thence there appears to have been a sufficient intimacy, if I may use the word in such a case, for the King to embrace a proposal so agreeable and flattering to his love of splendour.

\* Hall died in the same year with King Henry VIII. 1547. Vid. Wood's *Athenæ*.

† Lloyd says, it was discharged soon after the institution "by the influence of that wary Statesman, Thomas Howard, Earl of Surry." [Lloyd's *Worthies*, ut supra.]

‡ Read *Coustrill*. Vide postea.

§ *Cloth of Gold*, so much in use formerly, must have been a very expensive article, when we consider the value of money at the time; for the Statute of Apparel, made in the 24th year of this reign, speaks of its being sometimes upwards of 5*l.* per yard.

was scarcely embodied and completed before it was disbanded, and lay dormant for 30 years; when, as they tell us, it was revived, (1539), on the King's marriage with the Princess Anne of Cleves. On this occasion, say they, the troop was re-established under the name of **PENSIONERS** or **SPEARS**, though much fallen from its original splendor; and to these "was assigned the sum of 50 *l.* yearly apiece for the maintenance of "Themselves, and two Horses, or one Horse and a Gelding of "service \*." So far these accounts go of the institution and revival of the body, in which the above writers have copied each other, though Lord Herbert gives (or pretends to give) a reason independent of the marriage, which he treats as a mere pretext, and tells us it was owing to the King's fears, on account of discontents which prevailed both at home and abroad.

And now, Sir, I am become amenable to you for the support of the allegations which I have brought forward against the evidence of chroniclers, historians, and compilers, who have touched upon the subject; and I have the satisfaction to produce a transcript of the original **STATUTES** or **ORDINANCES** for the erection and government of this Corps, together with the **OATH** to be taken by each individual, signed by King Henry VIII. which may be seen in the Cottonian Library, with the following title †:

*CERTAIN ORDENANCES and STATUTES, devised and signed by the King's Majestie for a Retinewe of Speres or Men of Arms, to be chosen of Gentlemen that be commen and extracte of noble Blood. Withe a forme of their OTHE.*

\* Holingshed, p. 1574. Stowe's Chron. p. 577.

† Tirus. A. XIII. N. 24. This article does not appear in Smith's Catalogue of the Cottonian Library; but it is to be found among the *MS. Addenda* to the *Museum-Copy* of that Catalogue. This *Unique* (for such probably it now is) contains five small quarto leaves of parchment indented.

HENRY R.

*Forasmuche as the King our Sovraigne Lorde, of his greatt noble-  
nesse, wisdom, and prudence, considreth that in this his reame of Eng-  
land be many yong Gentlemen of noble Blod, whiche have non excer-  
cise in the Feate of Armes, in handling and renying the Spere and other  
saits of Werre on horsbacke like as in other Reames and Cuntreys be  
dayley practised and used, to the greate honor and laude of theim  
that soo dothe, his Highnes hath ordeyned and appointed to have a  
Retynue daily of certaine Speres called Men of Armes, to be chosen of  
Gentlemen that be comen and extracte of noble Blod, to the intent that  
they shall exercise the said Feate of Armes, and be the more mete and  
able to serve their Prince, aswell in tyme of Werre as otherwise,  
and to have good Wages to leve upon accordingly.*

*And to the intent alsoo, that evry of them shall knowe howe to  
order and demeane themselves, his Highnes hath made, ordeyned and  
established certaine Ordenances and Statutes following.*

*Furst, evry of the said GENTLEMEN shall have his Harneys com-  
plete and all other Habilements mete and necessary for him; with  
twoo Double Horses at the leeste for himself and his Page, convenient  
and necessarye for a Man of Armes; also his Coustrell\*, with a*

\* This word is uniformly mis-written throughout these ordinances; for it  
should evidently be *Coustil*, an abbreviate of the French word *Coustillier*, which,  
according to Cotgrave, signifies "The servant of a Man of Arms." This is not  
an error of the pen; for Lord Herbert observes, that the word *Custrell* had ob-  
tained in our histories, which, in truth, (says his Lordship) should be *Coustillier*,  
and he renders it conformably with Cotgrave, by *Ambattus*, which implies a  
servant, or rather an attendant, not of a menial sort. Lloyd, in his *Worthies*,  
above-cited, gives us the word *Coustillier*. But Père Daniel best explains this  
term. The *Coustillier* he conceives to have been a soldier armed with a *Couëlle*, a  
species of sword mentioned by some of the antient French writers under the  
name of *Cultellus*, longer than the sword then in common use, sharp from the guard  
to the point, and very slender, having three edges. [Hist. de France, tom. IV.,  
p. 162. Edit. Amst. 1720.]

Javelyn or Demye-launce, well armed and horsed as it apperteyneth. And they shall obeye in every condicon the Captaine that shall be ordeyned and deputed by the King's Highnes or his Deputie Lieutenant to have the rule, conduite and gov'nance of them in all things that thei shall be commanded to doo on the King's behalf.

Itm, That they shall make their abode in suche places as the King's Grace shall appointe them, or the said Captaine or the Deputy Lieutenant in the King's name, whedder it be in places nigh his Person, or elsewhere, upon pain for every such defaulte to lose six days Wages.

Itm, Evry of the said Speres and Coustrellys shall, at evry time, cary with them their Horses, Harneys, and other Habiliments of Werre, as thei have, and shall muster with, not lacking, at any time, pece or parcel of their said Habiliments of Werre nor Horses, upon payne of losing six dayes wages for evry suche daye and tyme as he shall be founden in defaulte, being afore commaunded by the King, Captaine, or Lieutenant.

Itm, In likewise, that non of the said Speres nor Coustrells shall in nowise departe oute of the place where they be assigned to make their said abode, withoute the special licence of the King our Sovraigne Lorde, or of their said Captaine, or Deputie Lieutenant: and to suche as licence shall be granted unto by the King's Grace or the said Captaine or Lieutenant, and the daye appointed them for their returne not to faile withoute lawfull excuse of sicknesse or otherwise duly proved, upon paine of the losse of double their Wages for every daye, as thei shall faile in comyng after the said daye to them lymited and assigned.

Itm, That evry of the forsaide Men of Armes shall furnyshe and make redy twoo good Archers well horsed and harnessed, and to bring them to muster before the King's Grace or suche persones as his Grace shall appointe within a moneth at the farrbest after the daye that they

of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS.

*they shall be commanded soo to doo by the King's Grace, or their Captaine or Lieutenant, and not to faile soo to doo, upon paine of losing their Rones, and their bodies to be ponyshed att the King's pleasure.*

*Item, If any of the said Archers after thei be admitted fortune to dye, the said Speres shall not admitte any other in their place, but shall name oon mete person for that Rone of Archer unto the King's Highnes, and bring him to his presens to be admitted at his pleasure, or els to the said Captaine or Lieutenant.*

*Item, For the Wages and Ent'teyning of the said Speres and Archers, the King's Highnes hath ordeyned and appointed that evry Spere shall have and receive for Himselfe, his Coustrell, his Page and his two Archers, thre shillings and foure pens sirlings by the daye, to be paid by hands of the Treasourer of the King's Chambre, whiche is appointed by the King's Highnes to paye them the same. And furthermore the said Speres shall receive their said Wages for them and for their Archers at the end of evry Month.*

*Item, The King's pleasure is, That the said Lieutenant shall have for the Wages and Entertaining of Himselfe, his Coustrell, Page, and six Archers, six shillings by the daye, to be payed in like manner as the said Speres shall be.*

*Item, The King's Grace wolle that the said Captaine or Lieutenant, with suche other psones as his Grace shall appointe shall evry quarter of the yere as it shal be the King's pleasure, see the Musters of the said Men of Armes and their Company, if any of them lakke Horse, Harneys, or if any of their said Horses and Harneys be not sufficient as they should be: if thei be not, that they be commanded by the forsaid Captaine or Lieutenant to provide for suche as shal be good and sufficient upon raisonable daye by the said Captaine or Lieutenant to be appointed. And suche as soo be founden in defaulte, that the said Captaine or Lieutenant, shall restraine his*  
*Wages.*

*Wages in the bands of the said Treasurer of the Chambre till he be sufficiently apparelled of suche thinges as he soo shall lakke, and thus the said Captaine or Lieutenante to doo upon payne of the King's displeasure, and losing of his Rome.*

*Itm, To thentent that the said Speres shall alweys be in the more Arredynes \* with their Retynue and suche Horse and Harneys and other thinges as shal be necessarye in that behalf, the King's pleasure is, That the said Speres shal be redy alweys to muster befor the said Captaine or Lieutenante at suche tyme or tymes as they shal be by them commaunded soo to doo.*

*Itm, It is the King's Commaundement That the said Speres and their Companye shall observe and kepe good rule and gov'nance, and nothyng attempte againste the King's subjects, contrarye to his lawes, and that thei duely and truly content and paye in redy money for vittalls and all other necessities that thei shall take for themselves their said Servants and Horses upon payne to be punished after the King's pleasure, And if any of theim shal be founde three times culpable in any such defaults, then he or thei to be deprived of his Rome and his body to be punished at the King's pleasure.*

*Itm, It is the King's pleasure and commaundement that none of the said Speres shall presume to take his Lodging by his owne auctorite but be ordered therein, and take such Lodging as by the King's Herbergiers †, for that purpose deputed, shall be appointed unto theim upon ponyshement asofsaid.*

*Itm, It is the King's Pleasure and Commaundement that none of the said Speres shall geve Wages unto any Archer, Coustrell or Page of any other Spere, nor to reteigne him as his frvante, excepte he be put to him by his own Master, being opn of the said Speres.*

\* Readines.

† Harbingers.

*The O T H E.*

*I ſhal be true and faithfull Subjecte and Servante unto oure So-  
verine Lord King HENRY the VIIIth, and to his Heirs, Kings  
of England, and diligently and truly give myn Attendance in the Rome  
of oon of his Speres, and I ſhal be reteyned to no man, pſone, ne  
pſones of what degre or condicon ſoever he be by Othe, Lyvree, Bagge  
[Badge], Promise or otherwiſe, but oonly to his Grace, without his  
eſpecial Licence \*. And I ſhall not hereafter knowe or here of any  
thing*

\* Sir William Bulmer was in the reign of Hen. VIII. rebuked for ſuffering himſelf to be retained by the Duke of Buckingham, while he was in the King's ſervice. [Hall's Chronicle, Hen. VIII. fol. 59.] A *Retainer* according to Strype [Memorials, Vol. III. p. 479.] "was a ſervant not menial, (that is, continually dwelling in the houſe of his Lord or Maſter) but only wearing his *Livery*, and attending ſometimes on ſpecial occasions upon his perſon. The *Livery* was wont to conſiſt of hats or hoods, badges, or other ſuits of one garment by the year. None could have Retainers but by licence from the Crown. Queen Mary was very liberal in granting licences; but Queen Elizabeth was as ſparing. Their tendency was often bad in keeping up animofities between great men, and fomenting rebellion, ſo that Statutes have been occaſionally made to regulate them\*." Feuds of this kind were ſtill more common in France formerly, and even ſo lately as the reign of Henry III. (anno 1579), we find the ſame Policy was adopted, on account of the factious temper of the nobility, when the Order of the Holy-Ghoſt was founded; for the Knights were ſworn, "de ne prendre Gages, Penſions, ou Eſtat d'autre Prince quelconque." [Pere Daniel, Hiſt. de France, tom. VI. p. 65.]

Lord Verulam relates a ſtory of the Earl of Oxford, who once entertained King Henry VII. "At the King's going away, the Earl's ſervants ſtood in their *Livery-coats*, with *Cognizances*, ranged on both ſides, and made the King a lane. The King called the Earl to him and ſaid—"Theſe handſom gentlemen and yeomen, which I ſee on both ſides of me, are ſure your menial ſervants!" The Earl ſmiled and ſaid, they are moſt of them my *Retainers*, they are come to do me ſervice at ſuch a time as this, and chiefly to ſee your GRACE. The

\* Anno 8 Edw. IV. Chap. 2. The Statute ſays, "None ſhall give *Liveries* but to their *MENTIAL* ſervants."

*The KING's Honourable Band*

*thing that shal be hurtefull or prejudiciall to his most royal pson, specially in treason, but I shal withstand it to th' uttermost of my power, and the same with all diligence, to me possible, disclose to the King's Highnes or to the Captaine of the said Speres or his Deputie Lieutenante or suche others of his Counsaile as I shal know woll discover the same unto his Grace. I shal not leye to pledge ne putte awaye suche Horse & Harneys as I nowe have mustered with before the King to any pson or psones, ne put oute of service any Archer, Custrell, or Page, that I have nowe with me, onles I have before showed cause resonable soo to doo to the King or the said Captaine or his Deputie Lieutenante in his absence: nor I shal knowe of any of my Company in likewise to leye to pledge or put away any Horse, Harneys, or Archers, but that I shal shewe the same to the King's Grace, his said Captaine or Deputie Lieutenante, in as brief tyme as I conveniently maye. I shal also truly and faithfully to my power observe and kepe from this daye forwards all and evry article comprized in a Boke assigned with the King's Hand, and all manner of Statutes and Ordinances in the same and in evry of theim conteined. On this I shal be obeysaunte unto my Captaine or Deputie Lieutenante, and the commaundements I shal observe and.*

"King started a little, and said; By my faith, my Lord, I thank you for my good cheer, but I may not endure to have my laws broken in my fight. "My Attorney must speak with you." And, continues Lord Verulam, it is part of the report, that the Earle compounded for no less than 15,000 marks. [Hist. of Hen. VII. p. 120.]

It may seem necessary to explain the term *Livery*, as it appears a very equivocal word in authorities, which I shall frequently have occasion to cite. The root of the Term is the French *Liverie*, and applies to all things deliver'd from the offices of the Royal Household respectively, viz. *Robes and Garments*, as well as *Diet, Wood, Candles, &c.* [Vid. the Northumberland Household Book.] The word is now worn out in its original sense, and is confined merely to a party-colour'd suit of Cloaths given to Men-servants.

*hope.*

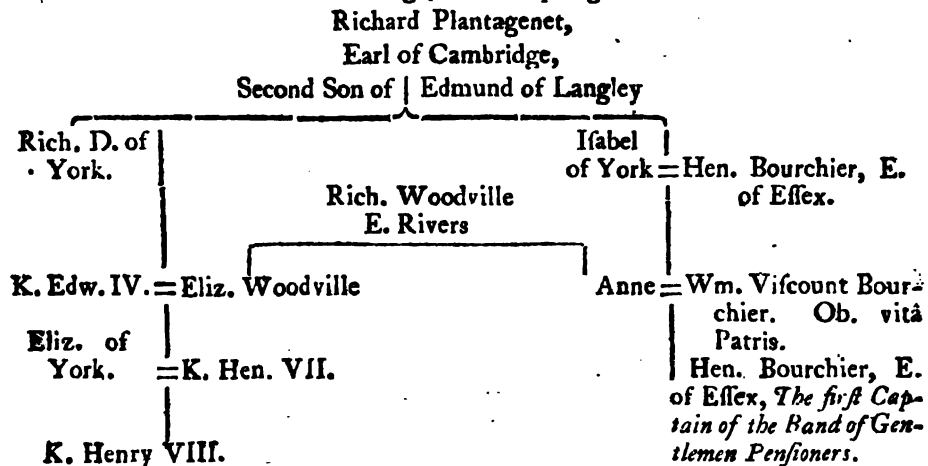
*kepe at all tymes, soo the same be or concerne the service of the King's Grace. And all suche causes secrete as shall be shewed unto me by the King's Grace, the said Captaine or Deputie Lieutenant, I shall keep counsaill without discov'ring of the same to any pson or psones till I be commaunded. I shall diligently geve my attendaunce with my Retynue upon the King's Grace in suche wise as I shall be commaunded and appointed by the said Captaine or his said Deputie Lieutenant and not absente or departe from the Courte without Licence of the King or of the said Captaine or his Deputie Lieutenant, in his absence, by the space of foure dayes. And also all suche Horse, Harneys, and other Habiliments of Werre as I nowe have mustered with before the King's Grace, the said Captaine or Deputie Lieutenant, be my own proper goods and non other man's: nor also I shall not muster at any tyme before the King's Grace the said Captaine or Deputie Lieutenant, with any Archer, Coustrell or Page, but oonly with suche as I have reteyned with me to serve the King's Highnes for the same entent. And thus I shall well and truly observe and kepe, and serve the King in the said Rome of oon of his Speres. So helpe me God and theis holy Evangelies.*

The precise date of these Ordinances is not specified, though we have established it by other authorities, neither is the intended number of the SPEARS ascertained; but it is probable that the time of completion was not then arrived, and that the Corps was merely in a state of formation. As to the number, it seems to have waited for the KING's pleasure to be further made known, as the foregoing Statutes only say *certain* SPEARS, neither are the CAPTAIN and LIEUTENANT mentioned by name, though the

printed accounts say that the *Earl of Essex* was CAPTAIN, and *Sir John Peachy* LIEUTENANT\*.

In the preamble, Sir, we see the ground-work, the model, and the intention of the Institution. It was well understood at that time what a *Man of Arms* was, and it explains to us what was then likewise expressed metonymically by a *SPEAR*; thereby comprehending all other appendages, the weapon implying the person, as in modern military language a *Drum* frequently expresses the *Drummer*, and a *Trumpet* the *Trumpeter*, &c†. These  
Gen-

\* Holingshed indeed has inverted them; but there can be no doubt that the Earl was the superior officer. This *Earl of Essex* was *Henry Bourchier*, who was nearly related to the King, his mother being Anne Woodville, sister to Elizabeth Woodville, (the Queen of King Edward the IVth,) the King's Grandmother; so that he was maternally first cousin to the Queen of King Henry VII. and but one degree more remote from King Henry VIII. The Earl's grand-father had married Isabel, sister to Richard Duke of York, and the alliance with Royalty commenced before his father's marriage, and the pedigree stands thus:



† So P. Daniel.—Tous les Gendarmes étant armez de pied en cap, et ayant pour une de leur armes offensives la lance qui leur fut long-temps propre, c'est pour cela que dans le style des Historiens de ce temps-la, *Gendarme*, *Homme d'Armes*, *Lance*, *Lancier*, étoit la même chose. [Hist. de France, sub anno 1532.]  
The

Gentlemen were to appear in armour, for by the word *Harnes*, at that time was meant a compleat Suit of Armour\*. The attendants of each *SPEAR* are described to be a *Page*, a *Coustill*, and Two *Archers*, though the Chroniclers give him but *one Archer*, a *Demi-Lance* and a *Coustill*: but a *Coustill* and a *Demi-Lance* appear to have been the same from the foregoing Ordinances, where it was said the *Coustill* was to carry a *Javelin* or *Demi-Lance*. By *Double-horses*, I presume, are meant *Great* or *managed Horses*, which probably were *Chevaux entiers* and not *Geldings*†. To these Attendants were to be added Two  
good

The French likewise apply the term *Guidon*, *Cornette* and *Ensign*, both to the *Standards* so called, and to the bearers of them, as we do, though in the last case they speak with a differential article, which our language will not admit. Thus Pere Daniel—"Cette espee d'Etendart a donné son nom à celui qui la porte: car on dit la *Cornette* pour signifier l'Entendart, et le *Cornette* pour signifier l'officier qui la porte." [Histoire de la Milice Française. Tom. II. p. 63.]

\* This appears from Wills, &c. Sir Robert Wingfield, by his Will, proved, Nov. 12, 1539, gives "his Target of Steel, and his light *Harnes*, and twelve footmens *Harnes* to his nephew John Wingfield:" And further bequeaths his late brother's "*compleat Harnes*" to his nephew, Richard Wingfield. [Vid. Antis's Register of the Garter, p. 230.] Thomas Beaufort, Duke of Exeter, (by his Will, proved 1426) bequeathed to Ignatius Clifton, "*Unum Harnesum Armorum*." [See the Royal Wills, published by J. Nichols, 1780, p. 162.]

† The *Great* or *Double Horses* then in use, we may suppose, were such as have been since seen in our heavy cavalry, on which, in cases of necessity, ~~our~~ *one* horsemen could take up behind him another who was dismounted, or a person on foot who was wounded, or, in certain situations, a captive. Thus, in the last instance, we find that when Sir Thomas Wyatt surrendered himself, in the reign of Queen Mary, he was brought by Sir Maurice Berkeley from Temple-Bar to Whitehall, on the same horse behind him; as was Sir Thomas Cobham, behind another gentleman. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 90. Vid. also, Godwin's Anna's of Queen Mary.] Froissart mentions these horses, which Lord Berners translates *double horses*, [Chap. 149]. The French term is *Roissins*, which see in

good *Archers*, on horseback, and in Armour. For the support of this their Retinue each *SPEAR* was to have a daily Pay of *three Shillings and four Pence*, a much more considerable Sum at that time than the 50*l.* which the printed accounts have allowed; for the result of three shillings and four pence per diem, is 60*l.* 16*s.* 8*d.* per annum.

The regulation and discipline of this Troop appears every where in the Statutes to have been an object of great attention, as the mulcts for absence and irregularity are very large; and the Oath, which is specific and prolix, seems intended to have been taken publicly in the field, after a muster, in the presence of the King, or commanding Officer, and the whole Band\*. I would take this opportunity of observing, Sir, that the two persons in armour, with *Spears* in their hands, mounted on horses differently caparisoned, and who immediately follow the Duke of Suffolk and Sir Anthony Browne, in the print of the Siege of Portsmouth, [1545] lately engraved by your Society, seem to be a *SPEAR* and his *Coustill*; and there appears to be several others of each sort, as likewise *Archers*, scattered up and down in the general groupe of figures in that print.

Thus much, Sir, for the institution of the *SPEARS*; and if we are to credit the printed accounts we shall hear no more of them for thirty years, viz. till the year 1539. They tell us that the expence was too great for them to exist long, and that the *Corps* was ~~was~~ very soon *disbanded* after it was formed, (though they

Cotgrave. *Horses* for draught were, at that time, distinguished by the term *trotting* horses. [Northumberland Household-book, p. 127.]

\* The words, we may recollect, run—That the Horse, Harness, and other Habilliments of war—"as I now have mustered with before the King's Grace, the said Capitaine or Deputie Lieutenant, &c."

give in the charge at less than it really was) and that the revival was made in a very sparing manner, unworthy of its first establishment; for that though the SPEARS were allowed for their yearly salaries 50*l.* each, yet they were only bound to supply two horses, or, optionally, "One Horse, and a Gelding of Service\*."

There is, indeed, reason to believe that their Pay was lessened, and that their Retinue was diminished at the above period; but it had taken place long before the year 1539: for if we look into the Household Statutes, made at Eltham, 1526, we shall there find the *Corps* complete, and fully *officered*, and (for the first time that we have good authority to call it so) under the present Title of THE BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. In order to raise the stipends of the additional officers, the pay of each Pensioner seems to have suffered a considerable defalcation, (being reduced to 50*l.*) and it is presumable that on account of such abatement, some part of their Retinue was dispensed with. About this period (or soon after) the *Battle-Axe* was probably introduced, as they began now to operate *on foot* in the *Court*, as well as *on horseback* in the *Field*; in which former case they might carry the *Pole* or *Battle-Axe*, though they used their *Spears* on horseback. If the *Corps* was actually new modelled, the KING, who had formed it, (as the original Statutes say) on a Plan adduced from foreign countries, might adopt the *Battle-Axe* from the French, as it approximates very much to the *Becs de Corbin*, borne by some of the most ancient Household Troops in France.

Having mentioned the *Becs de Corbin* in the French establishment, I must beg leave, Sir, to insist for a few moments on the subject, from whence it will appear that both *Corps*, in

\* Vide Holingshed, fol. 1574.

their establishment and governance, have mutually borrowed from each other. In the account given us by Pere Daniel \*, a very exact parallel is found between our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS in early times, and the *Gentils-hommes du Béc de Corbin* in France, who were formerly regarded, during several Reigns, as the *principal* and most *honourable* Guard of the King, being styled “*La Grande Garde du Corps* \*.” Let us examine the features of them respectively, which will confirm the resemblance. The French Corps was originally composed of *one Hundred Gentlemen* of rank and consequence, under the command of a *Captain*, a *Lieutenant*, and an *Ensign*, and were expressly instituted by Louis XI. (1474), as a *Garde du Corps*. Each of these *Gentlemen* was armed with a *Lance*, and attended by a *Man of Arms* and *Two Archers*, and as they were for the most part formed from the *Gentlemen of the King's Household* or *Pensioners*, “*Gentils-hommes de son Hotel ou Pensionnaires*,” the Troupe was called *The Company of the Hundred Gentlemen of the King's Household, appointed for the Guard of his Person*—[“*La Compagnie de Cent Gentils-hommes de la Maison du Roy ordonnés pour la Garde de son Corps* †.”] This, I cannot doubt, Sir, was the foreign establishment, to which our K. Hen. VIII. alludes in the Proeme to the Statutes for the formation of his *Band of Pensioners* now before us, and the following traits will strengthen the surmise.

We have seen our own *Band* furnished from the prime of our Gentry, or from the younger branches of our antient Nobility ;—and P. Daniel tells us, on authority, that there was

\* Histoire de la Milice Française. Tom. II. p. 99. et seq. † Idem. p. 100.

† A second Company of 100 was added to them by Ch. VIII. 1497, which was styled Extraordinary, though they both went collectively under the original denomination of *The Hundred Gentlemen*. These last were entirely abolished by Louis XIV. 1688.

not a family of antiquity in France which had not, at different times, one of it enrolled in the Band of *The hundred Gentlemen* \*.

Each of these *Gentlemen*, like our own, had, as has been seen, *Two Archers*, whom he furnished with *Horses* and *Arms*, at his own expence †.

In point of degradation, the French *Band* kept pace with our own, wherein we shall find hereafter Orders to prevent the admission of persons improperly qualified with respect to rank, and without the entire approbation of the Sovereign: for P. Daniel tells us, that by an Ordinance of Hen. III. (A. D. 1585.) the Captain was enjoined not to admit any into the Corps who were not of competent gentility by birth, and that each *Gentleman*, previous to his admission, should be presented to the King for his sanction. [Vid. the Orders respecting our Band, postea ‡.]

As the French Band was denominated *Gentils-hommes du Bec de Corbin*, from the *Arms* they made use of; so ours, we shall find, were frequently called *Gentlemen of the Axe* ||.

\* He cites the author of a book intituled, "Les Origines des deux Compagnies," whose words are—"Je puis dire qu'il n'y a guerres d'ancienne Maison de Gentils-hommes qui ne trouve quelq'un des siens enrôlé en l'une de ces deux Compagnies." [P. Daniel, ubi supra, p. 101.]

† "Chacun de ces *Gentils-hommes* avoit deux *Archers* q'il entretenoit, montoit, et armoit à ses depens sur sa solde. [P. Dan. ut supra, p. 101.]

‡ "Defend (sa Majesté) aux Capitaines d'enrôler en leurs Compagnies que *Gentils-hommes* de la qualité requise, lesquels à cette fin ils lui presenteront auparavant que de les recevoir." [P. Dan. ut supra, p. 105.]

|| The French were sometimes styled *Becs de Faucon*—and from their Pay, which was Twenty Crowns [Vingt Ecus] per month, (I presume a large and singular allowance) they have been likewise called, "*Les Gentils hommes des Vingt Ecus*." [P. Daniel ut supra, p. 103.]

The rank of the *Captain* (or the Commander for the moment in the French Court) appears from the Orders cited by P. Daniel, wherein it is said, that wherever the *Hundred Gentlemen* attended the King with their Arms, the *Captain* (or the chief in command) should walk nearest to the King, on his right hand\*.

On the other hand, Sir, we may now observe a point in which *our practice* seems to have given the impression to the French Court. The *Band* of our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as we shall soon see, was allowed the liberty of *quarterly-waiting*, by detachments, in the reign of its founder, King Henry VIII. which circumstance was afterwards introduced into the French establishment under Hen. III. (A. D. 1585.) when *The Hundred Gentlemen* were admitted to the same indulgence: for the French Ordinances direct that those who were in waiting (*en quartier*) should be on duty at a given hour†.

The Penalties likewise for non-attendance were loss of wages, and dismissal for aggravated offences, which appear to have been the punishments prescribed by our Orders from time to time. [See the reigns of Q. Eliz. and K. K. Ch. I. & II. postea ‡.]

\* P. Dan. ut supra. Vid. postea, in the Reign of King Charles II. for the parallel.

† “ Veut aussi sa Majesté, que les Gentils-hommes étant *en quartier*, se trouvent en son Antichambre des les six heures du matin, pour l'accompagner avec leurs Haches, comme ils ont accoutume, jusqu' à son Diner, et l'après-dinée, jusqu' à son Souper.” [P. Dan. ut supra, p. 105.]

‡ “ Le premier jour de chacun Quartier le Capitaine ou le Lieutenant entrant en charge (c'est à dire en quartier) présentera à sa majesté les cinquante Gentils-hommes de service, et les lui nommera: les defaillans perdront leurs gages.” [P. 105.] and further, “ Enjoint sa Majesté ausdits Gentils-hommes d'observer de point en point tout le contenu cy-dessus sous peine de Cassation.” [Id. p. 106.]

Again,

Again, Sir, *The Hundred Gentlemen* had a Table in the King's House—" Ils avoient les Privileges des *Commenseaux*." [P. Daniel, p. 107.] as had our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS formerly, which will be discernible when we come to the Reigns of Q. Eliz. and K. James I.

The French Corps in their attendance on the Sovereign, appeared sometimes *on Horse-back*, and at other times *on foot*, according to the occasion, and such, we shall soon have opportunity to observe was the case of our GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. In these situations both were armed respectively with *Lances*, on Horseback, and on Foot, with *Axes*:—Thus Pere Daniel, " Ils avoient outre la *Lance*, la *Hache d'Armes*, dont " ils se servoient lorsqu' ils etoient de Guet ou de Garde aupres " de la Personne du Roy." [Ibidem, p. 107.] To go still farther, the position and precise distance from the Royal Person, to be observed by the Commander of *The Hundred Gentlemen* in either case, is prescribed by the Ordinances of Hen. III. with most minute exactitude \*.

This, P. Daniel informs us, Sir, was the state and discipline of *The Hundred Gentlemen* in the year 1585 under Hen. III. of France, to which we may add that our own body of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, under Q. Elizabeth (the contemporary Sovereign of England) was by no means inferior in dignity, or in any thing but number, as we shall perceive, when we arrive at that period.

The service of the French Corps, at the time when P. Daniel wrote (1708) was reduced to mere occasional parade, on great and solemn occasions, when they walked before the King with

\* " Si la Majeste est à pied, ceux des dits Rangs, qui seront à coté d'elle, ne " passeront point en arriere le pommeau de son Epée; et si elle est à cheval, ne se " tiendront point plus en arriere que la pointe de son pied." [Id. p. 106.]

their Insignia of Office [the *Becs de Corbin*] as they did, he tells us, when Louis XIV. came of age, 1651—at his marriage, 1660—and at a ceremonial of the Knights of the Order of the Holy Ghost, in the following year\*.

But to return, Sir, to our own PENSIONERS. King Henry had his grand interview with Francis I. of France, between Guines and Ardres, 1520, and out of compliment (but I speak without authority) might affect a similar appearance in his Body-guard at the interview with what he knew was used by King Francis:—but be that as it may, several of these GENTLEMEN with their *Battle-Axes*, are discernible in the picture of the *Champ de Drap d'or*, which leads one to imagine that the *Battle-Axe* had obtained about that period.

Cardinal Wolsey, who was never tardy in apeing Royalty where he could, had a similar, though humbler escorte of *Pole-Axes*, when he was Lord High Chancellor: for besides his Two *Cross-Bearers*, as *Arch-Bishop*, and his Two *Pillar-Bearers*, as *Cardinal*, mounted on great Horses, who preceded him, he had likewise, when he went to Westminster-Hall, on his mule, as

\* It is a little singular that they are not here mentioned on the Coronation of Louis XIV. (1654) where I find from another account they made a part of the cavalcade on the King's return from the cathedral of Rheims to the Palace of the Arch-bishop, being styled, "Les cent Gentils-hommes de la Maison du Roy avec leurs Becs de Corbin." [See le Sacre de Louis XIV. printed at Paris, 1720, 12mo. p. 332.] Monsieur Menin, in his general description of the Coronation of the Kings and Queens of France, [Lm°. 1755, 8vo. p. 259] likewise gives them a specific place at all Coronations:—and yet they are not mentioned in the printed account of the Coronation of the present King Louis XVI. (1775) published at the moment.

Lord Chancellor, four Gentlemen on foot about his person, bearing each a *Pole-Axe* in his hand\*.

But to proceed. It is very clear, if this Body of *SPHARS* ever was disbanded, that the period of the revival must have been egregiously mistaken; for in the year 1526, the Corps stands thus in the Statutes of Eltham.

|                                  |      |      |             |
|----------------------------------|------|------|-------------|
| A CAPTAIN, with the Salary of    | -    | -    | 200 Marks   |
| A LIEUTENANT,                    | -    | -    | 100 Pounds  |
| A STANDARD BEARER †,             | -    | -    | 100 Marks   |
| Fifty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, each | 46l. | 13s. | 4d. ‡       |
| A CLERK of the CHEQUE            | -    | -    | 40 Pounds § |
| A HARBINGER,                     | -    | -    | 18 Pounds.  |

This taken in the gross is an enlargement rather than a reduction; for the *Captain*, in the original Establishment, does not appear to have had any salary ||. The *Standard-Bearer*, the *Clerk of the Cheque*, and the *Harbinger*, were additional officers,

\* Cavendish's *Life of Wolsey*, p. 29. Sir Thomas More, in a Speech to the House of Commons was not a little severe upon the Cardinal, on account of his *Pole-Axes*. [More's *Life of Sir Thomas More*, p. 51.] He had also *Yeomen of his Guard*. Cavendish, p. 20.

† The corresponding Officer of the Yeomen of the Guard is styled *Ensign*, which arises from the French distinction, where the term *Cornet* or *Standard-bearer* has always been peculiar to the *Horse*, and that of *Ensign* to the *Foot*, as we now use them. [V. P. Daniel, *Hist. de la Milice Française*, Tom. II. p. 64.]

‡ Apparently a singular sum—but it will analyze into *seventy Marks*, an usual Household computation, when wages did not run *per diem*.

§ This was then an office of much business and attendance, and therefore merited a large salary; for such 40l. was at that time.

|| The *Captain* at the Institution had probably the allowance of a *Gown* only; in like manner as the *Captain* of the *Yeomen* had till the Restoration. [redacted]

and

and as to what regards the *Pensioners* themselves, this account is so free from error that they are mentioned *by name* \*.

We have now, Sir, got a *Standard-Bearer*, and you will ask what was the device upon the *Standard*? I must refer you to Dr. Chamberlayne's *Angliæ Notitia* of the year 1672, who tells us it was *St. George's Cross*, and that it was likewise *four Bends*: but in this last bearing he does not give the colour of the Field, or of the Charge. The former of these is obvious; but the latter is not so solvable, unless it can be presumed (if the authority is allowed) that the Band had *Two Standards*; the one to be used when they mustered before the KING, and the other on their private or periodical musters; and which might very well carry the Arms, Crest, or Device of one of their CAPTAINS.

It cannot be supposed that at this period there should be a *Standard-Bearer* without a *Standard*, though the office is so circumstanced at present; nay, there is good reason to think there actually were two Standards in the reign of K. Edward VI. for in a MS. account of the payment of sundry officers of household, in the sixth year of that King, I find a payment "to John Pyers, Clerk of the Cheque to the Guard, for the hire of a house to lay the *Great Standards*, with the rich *Coats* and *Halberds*—1*l.* 14*s.* 8*d.*" This seems, *prima facie*, to relate both to the *Pensioners* and the *Yeomen*; but it will appear [redacted] that the *Yeomen* had no Officer of the denomination of *Ensign*, till after the Restoration. The rich *Coats* and *Halberds* I place to their account; but the *Stan-*

\* Vid. postea, where, at the close of this Reign, the *Names* are given.

*dards* must (for the reason given) be confined to the PENSIONERS, and comprehend the *Two* belonging to the BAND\*.

Leaving these Gentlemen in the year 1526, in the state we have seen, they are found avowedly by all the chroniclers not inconspicuous on the ceremonial of the reception of the Princess Anne of Cleves (1539): for though it is well known, that the match was not only political, but, after a previous interview at Rochester, disgusting to the King; yet he determined to pay the Princess all possible respect, and her Highness was received with great state by the King and his suite on Blackheath, at the foot of Shooter's Hill. She was accordingly accommodated in a rich pavilion, till the KING and his train arrived, when he was accompanied by the *Corporation of London, Knights, and Esquires*, and the procession was closed by the *Fifty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS*. Of this Body each had *Two Horses*, one for himself and the other for an attendant, and accordingly my author (Holingshed) goes on, and tells us, that, "behind the GENTLEMEN stood the *serving-men*" [the *Coufitts*] "in good order, well horsed and apparell'd; that

\* As to the KING's *Great Standard*, there was at this time and long afterwards, an official *Standard-bearer*, such were in the reign of King Hen. VIII. the two Sir Anthony Brownes (father and son)—and the KING's *Great Standard* would hardly be consigned to the care of the *Clerk* of the *Cheque* of the *Yeomen of the Guard*. From whence Dr. Chamberlayne took his information I cannot perceive; but on a nearer examination it might originate from a passable error, arising from ignorance or inattention, and in such case the subordinate *Standard* has the appearance of carrying the Armorial Bearing of one of the *Captains* of the Band; whom I take to have been the second Sir *Anthony Browne*, and who will appear to have succeeded the *Earl of Essex* in the command. The Arms of Sir Anthony were (as now borne by his descendant Viscount Montacute) "Sable, three Lions passant in Bend, between two double Cotises, Argent." On which I would remark, that, the Lions being overlooked by an unskillful observer, the two double Cotises in the Blazon have transiently the appearance of four Bends.

"whosoever

“ whosoever had well viewed them might have said, that they,  
 “ for tall and comely personages, and clean of limb and body,  
 “ were able to give the greatest Prince in Christendom a mortal breakfast, if he had been the KING's enemy.”

The KING advancing on horseback, with his attendants, stopped when he arrived at the end of the rank of the PENSIONERS, and the interview took place, during which the “ Fifty PENSIONERS, with the *Guard*, departed to furnish the “ Hall at Greenwich.” Here accordingly we find them again when the King and his intended Queen arrived there; for, *below* the hearth in the Hall were placed the [Yeomen of the] *Guard*, and *above* the hearth “ The *Fifty PENSIONERS* with “ their *Battle-Axes*.” From this account we may observe, that the *Corps* was at that time a troop, similar to what we now, in the military line, call *Dragoons*; serving on horseback, when the KING was in the Field, and other occasions, within the Court, on foot. In both these characters we have seen them on the reception of the Lady Anne of Cleves — first, on horseback at Blackheath, and immediately afterwards on foot in the Hall at the Palace of Greenwich.

Soon after this period, some latitude was given to the *Band*, in point of attendance, and it was allowed that half the *Band* should wait quarterly, except on the principal Feasts. Whether this arose from the severity of the then duty, or to relieve the *Gentlemen* in point of expence, does not appear. The following however are the orders which issued after the *Earl of Essex* had

• Holingshed. The King's Hall, by this description, seems to have had the fire in the centre, as in the halls of colleges, inns of court, and other societies.

resigned the command, and when Sir *Anthony Browne* was CAPTAIN of the BAND.\*

*Where[as] it hath pleased the King's Majesty, at the special sute of Sir Anthony Browne, Knighte and Captaine of his Majesty's Gentlemen Pensioners, to graunt and enlarge his Highnes' said Pensioners to the libertie of Quarter-waiters, by the Checke, as is in an article before mensured, so that continually thone halfe of them shall be attendaunt without any excuse of sicknes or otherwise; but that he or they that shall fortune to be sick, or have any other lett within his saide Quarter, shall, for the tyme of his absence, fynde one of his Companye that shal be oute of his Quarter to waite upon the King's Majesty, and to furnishe his place, or ells to be in daunger of the Check; and the other halfe for the meane tyme of their halfe yere so by the quarter to be taken att their libertie:*

*Item, The whole Band of the said Gentlemen Pensioners, at the fower principall Feasts of the yeare, that is to saye, Christmas, Ester, Whitsontid, Alhollontyd, shall give their attendaunce under Check as they now doe.*

*Item, In consideracon whereof, whereas nowe they are bounden to the findinge of Twoe Greate Horsis only, they shall each one, from henceforthe, keepe Threë Horses furnished accordingly.*

\* In what year *Henry Bourchier, Earl of Essex*, resigned, is not precisely determinable; but his death is mentioned by several historians, (particularly by *Bishop Godwin*) as having taken place by a fall from an unruly horse, 1546. The Orders which we are going to transcribe are a sufficient ascertainment that the *Earl* did not die in the Command, but that *Sir Anthony* succeeded him in his life-time.—*Sir John Peachy*, the first Lieutenant of the Band, seems likewise to have closed his life in an unfortunate manner; for he either died of the plague, or by a slow poison, supposed to be given to him at the banquet made at *Ardres*, when *K. Henry VIII.* and *K. Francis I.* had the Grand Interview, 1540. [Vid. *Hall's Chron. Hen. VIII.* pp. 89, 91. b.] He was a Knight-Banneret, having been made such, 1513. [Id. p. 33. b.]

"Item, Notwithstandinge this graunte of libertie they be neverthe-  
 "lesse at all tymes in suche a readynes, that when warninge shall  
 "be given unto them from the Officers above them, they and every  
 "of them shall, accordings to the same, repaire to the Courte, and  
 "give suche attendaunce for the tyme as shall be appointed unto  
 "them usinge for that season, be it in their Quarter or other-  
 "wise, no lesse diligence then they doe at the present, as appoynt-  
 "eth \*."

We have but very transient views of the *Band* in this reign after the period last mentioned, except that the *Gentlemen* seem to have attended the KING on all occasions, in the military as well as the civil line. Thus, according to Lord Herbert, they escorted his Majesty at his Grand Entrée into *Boulogne*, after it was taken (1544), with the *Earl of Essex* at their head †. Another writer, Strype [Memorials, Vol. II. p. 115] likewise tells us that they were with the King at the siege of that city, to the number of *Two Hundred*, including a retinue of *Three* to each *PENSIONER*, all mounted "on barded ‡ horses, in one  
 "Suit

\* Bibl. Harl. N. 6142.

† William Parr, Earl of Essex, afterwards Marquis of Northampton, who, it is presumable, succeeded Sir Anthony Browne in the command, when he was made Master of the Horse, 1540. This new Earl of Essex was in very high estimation with the King, who had married his sister, strengthened by the Earl's own marriage with his Majesty's second cousin, the sole daughter and heiress of Henry Bouchier, late Earl of Essex.

‡ By *Barded* horses, I understand horses fully armed, on their Faces, Manes, and Chests, and otherwise caparisoned, from the French Verb *Barder*, which, according to the glossarists, signifies to accoutre a War-Horse. [See Cotgrave, Richlet, &c.] Pieces of this sort of Armour are still to be seen in the Tower of London. The words *Barded* and *Barbed* are often used as synonymous terms, though they, perhaps, have their distinctions:—Thus, in a Diary of the Siege of Boulogne, written at the time. [Vid. Rymer's *Fœdera*, Tom. XV.]  
 the

" Suit of *Red* and *Yellow* Damask, the Bards of their horses, and  
 " Plumes of Feathers, being of the same colours\*."

We are now brought, Sir, very near to the demise of the *Institutor* of the BAND; but I cannot dismiss this reign without troubling you with a List of the GENTLEMEN (as it stood at the time when the Eltham Statutes were made, in the year 1526), the major part of whom were probably the original appointees. In this roll will be found the names of many respectable persons, who either were Cadets of Families then of considerable account, or were themselves the Heads of Families afterwards ennobled.

A List of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as found in the Statutes made at *Eltham*, in the 17th year of King Henry VIII. A. D. 1526†, viz.

|                               |                          |
|-------------------------------|--------------------------|
| <i>Sir Humpbrey Ratcliff,</i> | <i>Edmund Brydges,</i>   |
| <i>Thomas Astley,</i>         | <i>Edward Earle,</i>     |
| <i>Thomas Avery,</i>          | <i>Edmund Horne,</i>     |
| <i>Thomas Butler,</i>         | <i>Edmund Harvey,</i>    |
| <i>Thomas Palmer,</i>         | <i>William Fullwood,</i> |
| <i>Henry Jerningham</i>       | <i>Edward Grimston,</i>  |
| <i>Henry Markham,</i>         | <i>Edward Vaughan,</i>   |
| <i>Edward Hastings,</i>       | <i>Humphrey Conisby,</i> |

the horses of the principal nobility attending the King on his departure from Calais, are described to have been "*Barbed* with Cloth of Gold." The representation of a Horse thus caparisoned, both *barded* and *barbed* (if there is a difference), may be seen in one of the plates of the *Manège Royal de Mons. de Pluvinel*, printed at Paris, 1623.

\* *Red* and *Yellow* are the true Royal Colours; but *Red* and *Blue*, though they have been long adopted, I apprehend, (if I may be allowed the liberty of the remark) are subject to the charge of false Heraldry. Many other combinations of colours in Regimentals are liable to the same imputation—but distinction has rendered them necessary.

† Transcribed from a copy in the Lord Chamberlain's Office.

|                   |                                |
|-------------------|--------------------------------|
| John Wingfield,   | Anthony Digby,                 |
| John Gresham,     | John Conway,                   |
| John Portman,     | Christopher Sackville,         |
| John Bannister,   | Christopher Litcott,           |
| John Paston,      | Charles Herbert,               |
| Jaques Granado,   | Nicholas Wadham,               |
| John Sandes,      | Peter Carew,                   |
| Robert Long,      | Simon Digby,                   |
| Richard Tyrrell,  | Stephen Adams,                 |
| William Blunt,    | Francis Hooke,                 |
| William Palmer,   | Robert Stafford,               |
| William Keydway,  | Nicholas Arnold, 46l. 13s. 4d. |
| William Skipwith, | each,                          |
| William Ellerker, |                                |
| William Bonham,   |                                |
| Walter Bonham,    |                                |
| William Francis,  |                                |
| William Betts,    |                                |
| Francis Knowlys,  |                                |
| Gawen Carey,      |                                |
| George Pollard,   |                                |
| Giles Poole,      |                                |

|                     |            |
|---------------------|------------|
| CLK. OF THE CHEQUE, | 40 Pounds  |
| [William Birch,]    |            |
| HARBINGER, [John    | 18 Pounds  |
| More,]              |            |
| THE CAPTAIN,        | 200 Marks  |
| THE LIEUTENANT,     | 100 Pounds |
| THE STANDARD        | 100 Marks  |
| BEARER,             |            |

It would be a fruitless labour to attempt to preserve successional lists of the Gentlemen of the Band, or of the subaltern Officers; but the names and titles of such of the CAPTAINS, as I have been able to collect with authority, are inserted in the Appendix N<sup>o</sup> I.

In the Reign of K. EDWARD THE SIXTH, Sir, we find frequent and familiar mention of the *Band*, even by the King himself, in his Journal. The first appearance of the PENSIONERS was, as it is natural to suppose, in procession from the Tower to Westminster, on the day preceding the Coronation, when "The PENSIONERS and *Men of Armes*, with their *Pole-Axes*, "went on either side the way on foote\*." By this arrangement they were placed longitudinally, at proper distances, so that, as appears from the ceremonial, the King was as nearly as might be in the centre of his BAND of PENSIONERS. On the day of the Coronation, the King landed in the morning at the Privy Stairs, where again we find the "PENSIONERS apparelled all "in *red Damask*, with their *Pole-Axes* in their hands:" and in the Procession to the Abbey they followed the Peers in the rear, immediately before the *Yeomen of the Guard*†.

In this and the following Reign, though both of them were so short, we shall find the BAND in an active line at home, and not immaterially concerned in times of inquietude, when the Sovereign was alarmed by impending danger. The next View we have of it is in a Grand Muster of all the *Bands* retained in the King's service, which I shall presently give at large, partly from the KING's Journal, but principally from a more enlarged account, once in the Cottonian Library‡.

It was the custom of those times for most of the Great Officers to have *Bands* of *Men of Arms*, horsed; and in Armour, who occasionally mustered before the King, together with the

\* Leland's Collectanea, Vol. IV. p. 312.

† Idem, pp. 322. 324.

‡ Vitellius, F. 5. printed in Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. p. 299. [The MS. was destroyed by the fire, and therefore this preservation is of more value.] The King's Journal is printed in Bishop Burnet's History of the Reformation, Vol. II. The *Autograph* may be seen in the Cottonian Library. Nero. C. X.

BAND OF PENSIONERS. The KING's *Band* mustered under the Royal Banner \*, and the rest under the Banner of their respective Commanders. These the King calls in his Journal *Gendarmes*, when he speaks of them separately ; and collectively, the *Gendarmerie*. The general Muster I have mentioned took place in the year 1551, of which the following account is given by Strype †.

“ The KING was now minded to see his standing Forces,  
 “ Horse and Foot, muster before him ; and the rather that he  
 “ might be in a readiness in case any Rising might happen, as  
 “ was apprehended by the discontented Duke of Somerset and  
 “ his party. So there were letters written and directed to cer-  
 “ tain of the Chief Officers of the Army to have the *Gendar-*  
 “ *mory* and *Bands of Horsemen*, which were appointed there in  
 “ a readiness to be seen by his Majesty. And a letter was dis-  
 “ patched to the *Marquis of Northampton*, CAPTAIN of the  
 “ BAND OF PENSIONERS, to have the Band appointed him in  
 “ a readiness with ALL the PENSIONERS and *Men of Arms*  
 “ attending on the Court.

“ In Hyde Park was then a great Muster in the KING's Pre-  
 “ sence after this manner. First came the KING's Trum-  
 “ peters—Then,

\* In a MS. account of the Payments made to sundry Officers of Household in the 6th year of K. Edw. VI. I meet with a *Standard-Bearer* with a Salary of 100*l.* per annum, and a *Banner-Bearer*, with 40*l.* per annum. The like Officers are found in the establishment of K. James I. in Off Arm.

† Memorials, V. II. p. 284. It is mentioned in Stowe's Chronicle, as is another Muster in the year following ; wherein, by the way, he gives the number of Pensioners at 150, meaning, no doubt, to include their Retinue, for he describes each Pensioner as having two Great Horses and a Gelding.

“ The LORD BRAY, in gilt Harness, CAPTAIN of the  
 “ PENSIONERS and a *Great Banner* of the KING's Arms\*.—  
 “ Then,

“ ALL the PENSIONERS in *complete Harness*, and great ar-  
 “ ray in *White* and *Black*, five and five in a Rank; and after  
 “ them came their servants, in number *an Hundred*, with  
 “ *Great Horses* and *Harness*, in *White* and *Black*, with *Spears*.

“ The second Company was led by,  
 “ The LORD TREASURER<sup>1</sup>, being *an Hundred Men of*  
 “ *Arms*, with brodered Coats, Red and White, with *Spears*:  
 “ his Standard a Falcon of Gold.

“ The third Company belonged to  
 “ The DUKE of NORTHUMBERLAND<sup>2</sup>, being *an Hundred*  
 “ *Men of Arms*, in Velvet Embroidery, with Trumpeters:  
 “ his Standard a Lion crowned and ragged [raguled] Staff.

“ The fourth Captain was,  
 “ The LORD MARQUIS of NORTHAMPTON<sup>3</sup>, with *an Hun-*  
 “ *dred Men of Arms*, in Yellow and Black; *Spears*, *Penfils*,  
 “ and Trumpeters: his Standard the Maiden's Head.

“ The

\* He should rather be called *Commander* of the *Pensioners*, as being only LIEU-  
 TENANT of the *Band*: for it has appeared that the MARQUIS of NORTHAMP-  
 TON was the CAPTAIN, though, on this occasion, he mustered as LORD HIGH  
 CHAMBERLAIN with *an Hundred Men of Arms* in Yellow and Black (his armo-  
 rial Colours) under his own standard. The Command of the *Pensioners* there-  
 fore devolved upon the Lieutenant Lord Bray.

<sup>1</sup> William Pawlet, Marquis of Winchester. [Dugd. Bar.]

<sup>2</sup> John Dudley, Lord High Admiral, Steward of the Household, &c. [Dugd.  
 Bar.]

<sup>3</sup> William Parr, Lord High Chamberlain, &c. The fortunes of this Noble-  
 man

“ The fifth [was]

“ The EARL of BEDFORD <sup>4</sup>, with *an Hundred Men of Arms*  
 “ in Red and White; his Standard a Goat, White: a Trum-  
 “ peter, Pensils, and Spears.

“ The sixth [was]

“ The EARL of RUTLAND <sup>5</sup>, with *an Hundred Men of*  
 “ *Arms*, in Yellow and Blue; his Standard a Peacock, and Pen-  
 “ sils.

man were singularly unequal. From a private gentleman he had arisen to uncommon honours, by virtue of his sister's marriage with King Henry the Eighth. His first Office was no greater than that of an Esquire of the Body to King Henry: he was afterwards created Baron Parr, and Earl of Essex, (as we have seen him at the siege of Boulogne) and elected a Knight of the Garter. In the first year of King Edward, the Sixth, we find him Marquis of Northampton, *Captain of the Band of Pensioners*; and in the King's fourth year Lord Great Chamberlain (for life) on the surrender of the Earl of Warwick. [Dugdale's Baronage.] These accumulated Honours and Offices did not last long; for on the King's demise, his Lordship unfortunately espousing the claim of Lady Jane Grey, jointly with the Duke of Northumberland, in opposition to Queen Mary, was attainted; deprived of all his Offices, and his Estate; degraded from the Order of the Garter; and reduced to the humble rank of William Parr, Esq. Notwithstanding all these deprivations, he was restored in blood by Queen Mary, and by Queen Elizabeth re-created into his former Honours; re-elected a Knight of the Garter, and installed a second time. A. D. 1559. [Anstis's Register of the Garter.]

<sup>4</sup> *John Russel*, Keeper of the Privy-Seal. [Godwin's Annals, and the King's Journal.]

<sup>5</sup> *Henry Manners*, Warden of the East and Middle Marches towards Scotland. [Dugd. Bar.]

“ The

" The Seventh [was]

" The EARL of HUNTINGDON <sup>6</sup>, with *Fifty Men of Armes*,  
" in Blue; Spears, Standard, and Penfils: his Standard a  
" Manche.

" The eighth [was]

" The EARL of PEMBROKE <sup>7</sup>, an *Hundred Men of Armes*:  
" his Standard the Green Dragon.

" The ninth [was]

" The LORD COBHAM <sup>8</sup>, with *Fifty Men of Armes*, in Black  
" and White: his Standard the Saracen's Head.

" The tenth [was]

" The LORD CHAMBERLAIN <sup>9</sup>, with *Fifty Men of Armes*,  
" Coats of White and Red, and Spears: their Coats in Broi-  
" dery, Penfils, his Standard the Maiden's Body.

" The eleventh [was]

" Mr. TREASURER CHEYNEY <sup>10</sup>, with an *Hundred Men of*

<sup>6</sup> *Francis Hastings* (second Earl of Huntingdon), a Privy Counsellor and Knight of the Garter. He was employed in a military character in the 4th of Edw. VI. against the French. [Dugdale's Bar.] I do not observe that he had then any great post at home.

<sup>7</sup> *William Herbert*, Master of the Horse. [Dugdale's Bar.]

<sup>8</sup> *George Brooke*, Lord Cobham. [Dugdale's Bar.] He does not appear to have then had any Office of importance.

<sup>9</sup> *Thomas D'Arcy*, Lord D'Arcy, of Chiche. [King Edward's Journal, sub anno 1550. Vid. also, Anstis's Reg. of the Garter.] Dugdale does not mention him as Lord Chamberlain.

<sup>10</sup> *Sir Thomas Cheyney*, Knight of the Garter, Treasurer of the Household.  
" [Dugdale's Bar.]

“ *Armes*, all Black, Spears, and Pensils, besides *Coffrels*: his Standard the Rose in the Sun \*.”

The King, Sir, seems to have received much satisfaction from the appearance made by his BAND of PENSIONERS and their Retinue on this occasion; for, to give you his own words, he describes them to have been “ well armed men; some with *Feathers*, *Staves* and *Pensils* of their Colours; some with Sleeves “ and Half Coats; some with Bards and Staves, &c.” This want of uniformity may rather strike us at present, though I presume it was an immaterial circumstance at the time. The King then adds, that “ the horses [were] all fair and great, the worst “ would not have been given for less than *Twenty Pounds*: there “ was [were] none under fourteen handfull and a half the most “ part, and almost all the Horses with their *Guider* † going be-

\* There is some variation in the numbers as summarily mentioned in the King's Journal, and the Earl of Bedford is omitted. Though I have termed the BAND of PENSIONERS *demi-military*, yet we may observe, from the Rank the GENTLEMEN here held among the standing forces, that they were considered as the prime of the army. So P. Daniel, speaking of *The Hundred Gentlemen* (the *Becs de Corbin*) says—“ Ils étoient le principal corps de l'Armée.” [De la Milice Française, II. p. 107.]

† *Great Horses* were at that time called *Dexters*, from the French *Destriers*, being led to the field by a servant (the *Guider*) with his *Right Hand*. [Vid. Mémoires sur l'ancienne Chevalerie, par Mons. de Ste. Palaye, tom. I. p. 21.] His words are, speaking of War-horses, that they were led—“ Par des Ecuyers qui les tenoient à leur droite d'ou on les a appellés *Destriers*.” But the expression is still more explicit in a note on this passage, where it is said, the Esquire who led the Knight's horse—“ Menoit son *Destrier* en *Destre*.” In more modern accounts (of the last century, for instance) I find them called *Chevaux de Main*, and the leaders styled *Palfreniers*. [Vid. Courses de Testes et de Bague, Paris, 1670.] The Latin word is *Dextrarii*.

“ fore

“ fore them. They passed twice about St. James’s Field, and  
“ compassed it round and so departed \*.”

These Musters had their use in home-service occasionally, in defending marches, opposing insurrections, &c. and the prime Nobility were thereby inured to the exercise of Arms. Sometimes the *Bands* performed mock fights and sieges, of which the King, in his Journal, mentions one in his second year, where thirty Gentlemen defended a fortress at Greenwich against an hundred assailants. Besides these, jousts and tournaments, running, shooting, &c. were in frequent use, wherein this young and active Monarch (who may in his time be properly styled *Princeps Juventutis*) bore a part, as he tells us himself. “ A Challenge,” says the KING †, “ was made by *Me*, that *I*, “ with Sixteen of my Chamber, should *Run at Base* ‡, *Shoot*, “ and *Run at the Ring* §, with any Seventeen of my *Servants*, “ GENTLEMEN in the Court.” Among those who entered the Lists against the King, it is natural to suppose there would be several of the younger and most active of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, as men trained to athletic Exercises, glad to signalize themselves, and provoke the KING’s notice in such honourable encounters.

Stowe

\* Journal. What was then *St. James’s Field* is now *Pall-Mall*, the adjacent streets, &c. [See a View of *St. James’s Palace* and *Westminster Abbey*, from the Village of *Charing*, engraved from a drawing of Hollar, in the Antiquarian Repository, Vol. I. facing p. 197.] It is worth remarking, that there was so little connection between the *City of London* and *this Village*, in the reign of King Henry VIII. that an Act of Parliament was made, 1533, to mend the road between the *Strand-Cross* (where the New-Church now stands) and *Charing-Cross*, it having become almost impassable. This act is printed in Rastall’s Statutes.

† Journal.

‡ This Diversion, by some called *Prison-Base*, and by others *Prison-Bars*, is still known in several parts of England.

§ I must here, Sir, beg leave to trouble you with a long Note. As few traces of this old diversion of *Running at the Ring* now remain, I take the liberty of

Stowe mentions another Muster made at Greenwich, in the last year of the King's reign, to which the Journal does not extend,

drawing together what has occurred to me on the subject. The practice is held not to be very ancient, and indeed, from the little comparative exertion required, seems rather to have succeeded Tilts and Tournaments, after the rage for personal engagements was worn out. It is, however, old enough to be almost forgotten.

A French Writer (Monsieur de Pluvinel \*) is of opinion that it was first adopted by officers of the Cavalry when in garrison, or when unemployed; by which means they preserved their horses in exercise, and themselves in the use and management of the Lance. The party, in order to retain every branch of discipline, was armed at all points.—The horse was put to his full speed, and the ring was of a very small diameter, and, according to Mr. de Pluvinel it was no larger than a man's eye†. Its position will be described presently. Gallantry, as in Tournaments, was generally the encouragement to this exercise; for our author tells us, it was usual for a Lady to give a Ring of value to be contended for by the candidates, which she bestowed on the winner with her own hand, and such reward has been personally conferred by Queens themselves. Public solemnities of various sorts were the occasions when the practice was exhibited, attended with much parade, and it seems to have continued in use till the end of the 16th and the beginning of the 17th century, after which it vanished both in England and in France; though I have authority to say, it is used at this day, by the Gemry, in several parts of Germany.

To have a nearer view of the position of the Ring, and the mode of *Running at it*, we must advert to some of the plates in Mr. de Pluvinel's work, where the Ring is represented as pendent from a kind of gibbet, being suspended from the horizontal beam by a spring which yielded to the touch, so as not to endanger the repulse of the horseman in his career. The species of Lance made use of appears to have been adapted to the purpose, being so slender as to receive the Ring with ease, and nearly as taper at the point as a small sword. There is a plate likewise on an inferior scale, which shews the position of the Ring, and the attitudes of the parties, to be seen (though without any description) in a small folio, intitled, "Militarie Instructions for the Cavalrie, by J. C. printed at Cambridge,

\* First Equerry and Riding-Master to Louis XIII. and who published a work on Horsemanship, with Plates, intitled, *Le Maccige Royal*. [Paris, 1623].

† From the drawing given by Mr. de Pluvinel, it appears however to have a diameter of two inches at least.

tend, where the *Captain* of the *Pensioners* (the Marquis of Northampton) mustered again as High Chamberlain; and the

“bridg<sup>e</sup>, 1632.” [Page 36]. One of the horsemen there represented (of which there are three) is running to take up a *Glove* from the ground on the point of his Spear, which will explain what occurs presently. The *Glove*, I presume, was thrown down by a Lady.

† There was a magnificent *Running at the Ring* held at Paris, by Louis XIV. (1662), but nothing is to be discerned from it for our satisfaction, except that the QUEEN herself delivered the Reward, a *Diamond Ring*, to the Winner, the principal objects for our present observations being obscured by the multiplicity of Figures in the Plate \*.

As to the rules generally adhered to in this exercise, I have found them nowhere except in a very obscure pamphlet now before me, containing the ceremonial of the Baptism of Henry Prince of Wales, performed at Edinburgh, A. D. 1594, and of the public entertainments consequent upon it †. I give the words as I find them.

“Every lackie carrying in his hand his Maister’s Launce, they began their pastime by *Running at the Ring and Glove* †; the Laws whereof were these:

- “1. That a’l the persons of this pastime compeare masked, and in such Order as  
“they come into the Field, so to run out a’l their courses.
- “2. That none use any other *Ring* but that which is put up: and use no other  
“Launce but that which they have brought for themselves.
- “3. He that *twice* touches the *Ring*, or stirs it, winneth as muche [as] if he  
“carried away the *Ring* ||.
- “4. He that lets his Launce fall out of his hand is deprived of all the rest of his  
“courses.

\* The account of this Ceremonial, for so it may be called, with very fine Engravings, was published at Paris, 1670, of which there is a good impression in the British Museum.

† This account was first printed at London, 1603, (Duodecimo) and afterwards reprinted at Edinburgh, 1687. Dr. Birch seems to have been ignorant of this publication.

‡ See above.

|| This seems to have been either a previous article by consent, or conformable to the custom of the country, as, in the account given by King Edward, it did not reckon; for we are told in the Journal, that his Majesty’s party touched the Ring often, “which was counted as nothing.”

the Lord Bray (the *Lieutenant*) had the command of the *Pensioners*. Other similar matters occur in different authors, not worth insisting upon.

These private Companies of *Band-Men*, as the King calls them, seem to have been, for the most part, provided for, in point of expence, by the King; though the men were to be found by the Captain, and evidently were disposed of according to his Majesty's pleasure. Thus, from the King's Journal, it appears, that the Band which the Duke of Somerset had, was, after his attainder, appointed to the Duke of Suffolk. The Duke of Northumberland having under him an Hundred Men of Arms, and an Hundred Light Horse, resigned Fifty Men of

- " 5. That every one run with loose reins, and with as much speed as his horse  
" hath.
- " 6. That none after his Race, in up-taking of his Horse, lay his Launce upon  
" his shoulder, under the pain of losse of that which he hath done in his  
" course.
- " 7. He that carrieth not his Launce under his arme, loseth his course.
- " 8. That none, until his *three* courses be ended, chaunge his horse, if he be  
" not hurt, or upon some other consideration moved to chaunge him."

The result on this occasion was, that, " Proof being made, the Victory fell to  
" the Duke of Lennox, who bringing it [the Ring I presume] to his Side and  
" Partic, had the Praise and Prize adjudged to himself." The Reward is described to have been " a fair and rich *Ring of Diamonds*," given by the QUEEN.

I finish this Note by observing, from King Edward's account, how difficult it was to carry the Prize; for his Majesty tells us, that in *One Hundred and Twenty* Courses the *Ring* was taken but *Three* times\*.

\* See the King's Journal, p. 26.

Arms to his son the Earl of Warwick \*. Again, when the Earl of Pembroke quitted the office of Master of the Horse, he likewise gave up Fifty of his Men of Arms, as being a command under the King, which were equally divided between Sir Philip Hobbey and Sir John Gates †: the rest the Earl kept, as being his own licenced retainers ‡.

As the formation of these bodies was at the pleasure of the King, by letters from the Council-Board, so was their dissolution. The King tells us, in his Journal, that it was agreed (in Council, I presume, from whence every public act, exclusive of the Parliament, issued) that “the Bands of Men of Arms” appointed to Mr. Sidney, Mr. Vice-Chamberlain [Sir John

\* Journal.

† Journal.

‡ Though the raising these Bands lay upon their Captains respectively; yet the Pay for them did not commence till the Corps was completed. Thus it appears in the 21st year of King Henry VI. that some Lord (not mentioned by name), who had desired to have wages advanced to him before he made his Muster, was answered by the Privy Council; that “In the King’s time that dead is, neither my Lord of Bedford §, neither my Lord of Gloucester §: never begun of their wages for them of their retinues, unto [untill] the time that they had made their whole musters.” We may observe how rigid the Council was in this respect from what follows, viz.—“and my Lord of Gloucester, for lack of two Spears of his retinue, was not allowed.” [Bibl. Harl. No. 81.] In these common Bands, as they were styled, great abuses were found in the reign of King Edward VI. [Strype’s Memorials, Vol. II. p. 148.] As to what we now call *Regiments*, they seem to have been adopted by us from France, where they were first established in the Reign of Charles the Ninth, about the year 1569, [Pere Daniel, Hist. de France]. The French herein probably followed the Spaniards, for the term is Spanish—*Regimiento*.

§ Both of them Brothers to King Henry V.

“Gates],”

"Gates], Mr. Hobbey, and Mr. Sadler, should not be furnished, but left off\*."

That these Bands were profitable as well as honourable to the Captain, is testified by Sir Robert Cary (afterwards Earl of Monmouth) who had a command upon the Middle March of Scotland under Queen Elizabeth, and laments, that on the accession of King James, he lost the Pay of Forty Horse which the Queen had given him. These Horsemen he had before described to be for the most part the Servants of his Household, which, to use his own words, were "Gentlemens Sons in the country, and Younger Brothers of good Rank †."

In the higher Line, of which we have been speaking, the Men of Arms were proportionably of greater Quality, viz. the Younger Sons of the Nobility, of Bannerets, &c. It was at this period an honour and no indignity for the young Nobility to be enrolled under another gallant Commander, though of inferior rank; and we are told that when King Henry VIII. had acquired reputation in his first war, and took the part of Spain against Louis XII. King of France, the Emperor Maximilian I. did not disdain to serve under the King ‡. To return,  
Sir,

\* Journal. Mr. or *Master* was, at that time, often applied to *Knights* as well as *Gentlemen*; for hereby are meant Sir Henry Sidney—Sir Philip Hobbey—and Sir Ralph Sadler, the last of whom was at that time a Knight-Banneret, as appears from the preceding part of the King's Journal.

† Memoirs, p. 113. From hence it should seem that these Cadets were merely expectants, and served without pay. Sir Robert farther insinuates that the discharge of this Troop would be no inconsiderable saving to the Crown. In fact, there was no occasion for such Forces on the Marches, after the Union of the Two Crowns.

‡ Burnet's History of the Reformation. The Emperor and all his Band wore the *Cross of St George* and the *Union Rose* on their breasts. [Vid. Mich. Drayton's

Sir, to the KING's *Band* of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. We have just now seen them drawn out among the *Gendarmerie*, and in the Field under the KING's *Banner*, and had it not been for the timely discovery of the Duke of Somerset's Conspiracy we should have found them in action ; for it was one part of Somerset's traiterous intentions to have attacked the whole *Gendarmerie*, on a Muster-day, with two thousand Footmen belonging to Sir Henry Vane, and with an Hundred of his own Horsemen, besides others in his interest, who were to have at first appeared in the Field as simple spectators of the Muster. This was confessed by Sir Thomas Palmer, one of the Conspirators \*. The intention was bloody ; for the King says, " the Duke intended no quarter, and that all the Horse of the *Gendarmerie* were to have been slain †." Sir Henry Vane's part in this intended massacre very deservedly cost him his life.

We will now, Sir, revert to the BAND in a more quiet hour. When the Q. Dowager of Scotland, passing from France thither (1550) was driven by a storm into Portsmouth, and had determined to proceed by land, she took the opportunity of visiting King Edward, and was received at Hampton-Court by many of the Nobility of both sexes, and by all the PENSIONERS with their CAPTAIN and LIEUTENANT. At her departure she was likewise escorted to the extremity of the City of London by the PENSIONERS among many others, and was there received by the Gentlemen of the county of Middlesex ‡.

The

Heroical Epistles, fol. 81, b.]—The Emperor was, indeed, a Knight of the Garter :—but the compliment lay in his wearing the *latter* Badge in addition to the *former*, and obliging his men to wear them *both*.

\* Journal.

† Journal.

‡ Journal. The *Band* was likewise occasionally employed in *Receptions* of Persons inferior to Royalty ; for antecedent to this (1549) when the Count d'Anguen

The next occasion, Sir, when we see the *Band*, is in a progress made by the KING, in the year 1551, when we learn from his Majesty's Journal, that on the 16th of May, a Muster was made of all the *Men of Arms* (with some exceptions) and also of all the *PENSIONERS*, for the purpose of draughting a certain number out of each Band for an Escorte. The progress was long, and took up more than two months. The King tells us what number of each Band was appointed to attend him: but as no draught was made out of the KING's own *Band* (the *PENSIONERS*) it is presumable the whole went on that service. The King, however, had not been out a month before it was necessary to lessen his train, and it was accordingly reduced to an Hundred and Fifty men, picked out of all the Bands. The King estimates the Retinue to have consisted of near Four Thousand Horse, which, says he, "were enough to eat up the country, for there was little meadow or hay all the way as I went \*." This, Sir, is the last view of them, as far as I can discern, during this Reign, by which, however, we find they had encreased in the number of their attendants by the King's account: and Stowe likewise informs us that they had each of them *Two Great Horses* and a *Gelding*; whereas, when we last saw them in the late Reign, each *Pensioner* had only *two* Great Horses, or optionally *one* Great Horse and a *Gelding*†. During the greater part of this Reign *William Parr, Marquis of Northampton* appears, from the King's Journal, to have been CAPTAIN of the BAND; and from a MS. list of Queen Mary's Household in the Library of your Society, I

guien, and others of the French Nobility, arrived in England, they were received at Black-Heath by Lords deputed by the King, and among the rest by Lord Bray, at the head of the *Pensioners*. [Journal.]

\* Journal.

† Stowe's Chronicle.

observe, he held it till his attainder, which took place in a few weeks after the Queen's accession : but whether he resumed the command after he was restored in blood, and re-established in his honours, I do not learn \*.

We have already seen that the *Marquis of Northampton*, though he was CAPTAIN of the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, had another *Band* allotted to him, as *Lord Great (or High) Chamberlain*, in favour of which last, (for so I interpret what follows, and not as extending indiscriminately to all the Band-men, who were very numerous) his Lordship procured this Order of Council.

“ *In Council* at Greenwich, May 11, 1550.

“ Upon motion made by the *Lord Great Chamberlain*, it was  
“ agreed, that from henceforth the *Gentlemen at Arms* should  
“ be placed successively in the PENSIONERS rooms at every  
“ avoidance, and so give attendance on his *Lordship* as their  
“ CAPTAIN †.”

The arrangement of the BAND, Sir, in QUEEN MARY'S Reign differed very little from what it had been in her brother's, except that I find, from the above MS. that the CAPTAIN, (*William Parr, Marquis of Northampton*) had a *Table*, at which it is probable the LIEUTENANT, (*Lord Bray*) and the STANDARD-BEARER (*Sir William Stafford*) dined ‡. In the  
next

\* The Queen acceded to the Throne, July 6, 1553.—The Marquis was committed to the Tower July 26, and tried August 18. He died 1571.

† Register Books of the Council-Office.

‡ These appear to have been the *Officers* belonging to the *Band* in the last mentioned manuscript. The names of the *Gentlemen* are there likewise given, which it is not necessary to repeat. Many occur that we have seen in the year 1526 : but as this Roll was made immediately on the Queen's Accession, it may rather be considered as a list of K. Edward's *Band* than of her own. What changes might

next Reign we shall find *Tables*, not only for the *Officers*, but for such of the *PENSIONERS* as were upon duty; for we have already seen they now waited *Quarterly* in equal divisions of half the *Band* at a time.

The number at this period was the same as it had thitherto been—viz. *Fifty*; of whom the Three first were Knights \*. The Pay of the *OFFICERS* does not appear from the preceding Roll; but the Stipend of the *PENSIONERS* was 46*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.* each, except that one of them (Thomas Astley) had an allowance of 100 Marks, (66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*) for which no satisfactory reason occurs.

To proceed chronologically—The first View we have of the *Band* in this Reign, when upon duty, is in an account of the *QUEEN's* Procession from the Tower to Westminster, on the day preceding the Coronation (a customary previous part of the solemnity in those times) left by an Italian anonymous writer, cited by Mr. Gough in his Edition of Perlin's Description of England; in the preface—"On each side of the procession," he tells us, "went both the *Gentlemen of the Axe* and the *Archers*, to "the number of 300 †."

But the most conspicuous appearance the *PENSIONERS* made in this Reign, and indeed (if I may say it without offence) at any other period, was in the same year (1553), when they were of real and essential use as a military body; for on the insurrec-

take place afterwards in this reign, on religious motives, we do not know, though it is scarcely probable that the *QUEEN* would retain any but such as were firmly in the Interest of the Church of Rome.

\* See the last-cited MS.

† London, 1775, Quarto, p. xiii.—This must pass for a round number, given us by a foreigner, on the *ipse dixit* of his informer; unless we understand the *Archers* to have been a part of the *Yeomen of the Guard*; armed with Bows, as in fact they were in the preceding Reigns.

tion of Sir Thomas Wyatt and others, they were very active in defending the Palace of Whitehall, the particulars of which are here given on the authority of one of the *Band*, who was present, by name *Edward Underhill* \*.

The part they took in this affair was as follows:—"The QUEEN, and her people at the Court, were in great consternation, when Wyatt was come to Southwark, with his army, intending to enter London that way. The GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS were commanded to watch in *Armour* that night, for the preservation of the QUEEN's Person; and they came up into the *Chamber of Presence*, with their *Pole Axes* in their hands. Whereat the *Ladies* were very fearful; some lamenting, crying and wringing their hands, and said Alas! there is some great mischief towards us! we shall all be destroyed this night! What a sight is this to see the QUEEN's *Chamber* full of *armed Men*! the like was never seen or heard of." The *Band* in their usual *Habits de la Cour*, with their *Battle Axes*, was an object familiar to the *Ladies*; but the panic arose from seeing them in the same place in *Armour* and on such an occasion. Soon afterwards the danger increased, and the Palace was beset by a party of the rebels from Westminster, and the gates closed. The PENSIONERS were then in the Hall, from whence they issued, and demanded that the gates might be opened, saying, "it was too much shame that the gates should be thus shut for a few rebels—the QUEEN shall see us fell down her enemies this day before her face." The Gates were then opened; but the QUEEN—"earnestly requested

\* Mr. Underhill was first a *Man of Arms*, at the Siege of Boulogne, Temp. Hen VIII. and afterwards, for his merit, was made a *Gentleman Pensioner* by that King, in which capacity he likewise served King Edward VI. and Queen Mary. He was of a respectable family; being the son of Thomas Underhill, of Honington, in Warwickshire, Esquire. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. II. p. 115.]

"that

" that they (the *Pensioners*) would not go out of her sight," intimating that " her only trust was in *them* for the defence of " her person that day."

The QUEEN was in the gallery over the gate. They then marched before the gallery window, " when she spake unto " them, requiring them as they were *Gentlemen in whom she " only trusted*, that they would not go from that place." There they marched up and down for the space of an hour, when news was brought that Wyatt was taken. " Anon after," says Underhill's narrative, " the Guard of PENSIONERS were all " brought into the QUEEN's Presence, and every one kissed her " hand; of whom they had great thanks and large promises, " how good she would be unto them: but few or none of us " got any thing, although she was very liberal to many " others that were enemies to God's Word, as few of us " were\*."

The next opportunity we have of observing the *Band* is on an occasion of greater tranquillity, in the year 1556, when, on the 20th of January there was a Muster before the Queen. " At Greenwich Park the QUEEN's PENSIONERS mustered in " bright Harness, and many barbed Horses. Every PENSIONER " had *three* Men in *Green Coats*, guarded with *White*; so they " rode about the Park, three in rank, upon Horses, with Spears " in their hands, the colours *White* and *Green*†. Afore rode " Trumpeters blowing; next a *Man of Arms*, bearing a *Stan-*

\* Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 89, where the above narrative is given from Fox's MSS. The Queen accounted this so great an escape, that Medals were struck in remembrance of it. [Evelyn's Numismata, p. 92.]

† These were favourite colours, and often used in Badges by the House of Tudor. [Archæologia, Vol. VI. p. 183.] A Green and White uniform was worn by the Lord High Admiral (Clinton) and his Captains, on the reception of the Prince of Spain. [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 120.]

“ *dard* of *Red* and *Yellow*; in the *Standard* a *White Hart*\*,  
 “ and on the one side a *Black Eagle* with gilded Legs†. Be-  
 “ tween Two and Three of the clock they came down and  
 “ mustered before the QUEEN at the Park Gate: before the  
 “ PENSIONERS rode many Gentlemen on *Gennets* ‡ and light  
 “ Horses, one whereof rode upon the finest *Mule*||. that ever  
 “ was seen, and so they rode to and fro before her Majesty.  
 “ At length the QUEEN thanked them all for their pains, and  
 “ so they departed; there were of the PENSIONERS Fifty and  
 “ more, besides their *Men of Arms*.”

In the year 1557; there was a similar Muster in Hyde Park;  
 “ The QUEEN’S PENSIONERS mustered in Hyde Park, and all  
 “ their men in *Green Cloth* and *White* §.”

In the early part of the Reign of Queen ELIZABETH; Sir,  
 we do not meet with any material change in the BAND itself.  
 The establishment, as to the number both of *Officers* and *Pen-*  
*sioners*, was the same as it had been left by Queen Mary; but  
 the pay of the latter seems to have been advanced to 50*l.* each\*\*.  
 Another advantageous circumstance likewise occurs at some  
 period in this reign, viz. Diet at a Royal Table, allowed to the  
*Gentlemen* in Waiting, as well as to the *Officers*, though we have  
 no date to fix the time of its taking place, with any de-

\* The *Hart* was one of the Queen’s cognizances, for it appears upon a Stan-  
 dard borne at her funeral. [Strype’s Mem. III. 466.]

† A part of King Philip’s armorial Bearings, as the son of the Emperor  
 Charles V.

‡ Small Spanish horses. The riders were most probably part of the Suite of  
 King Philip.

|| The Spanish Mules were at that time in great request, so that though we  
 have seen Cardinal Wolfey mounted on his *Mule* in the preceding Reign, it must  
 not, I fear, be attributed to his *humility*.

§ Strype’s Memorials, Vol. III. p. 444.

\*\* Peck’s *Defiderata Curiosa*, Vol. I. p. 59.

gree of precision. The fact itself is only to be collected from some Articles for the government of the *Band*, which will be produced presently.

Notwithstanding the latitude of *Quarterly-waiting*, which we have seen was obtained as an indulgence to the *Band*, towards the end of the reign of King Henry VIII. by Sir Anthony Browne, we find the whole body in frequent attendance on her Majesty, both in the Court and in Progresses:—Thus in the year 1598, Hentzner informs us he saw the QUEEN go to Chapel on a Sunday (and it does not appear to have been a high festival) when she was “ guarded on each side by the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, Fifty in number, with gilt Battle-Axes \*.” As the whole *Band* attended the QUEEN on certain occasions, when she moved in domestic state, it cannot be supposed but that it escorted her in progresses and other similar movements of the Court, as we find it did in a short excursion made by the Queen (1561) into various parts of the City of London and its adjacencies †. Again, in the year 1564, when the Queen visited the University of Cambridge, where she was entertained with literary and scholastic exercises, she was escorted to a Play by “ All the PENSIONERS on both sides, with torch-staves ‡.”

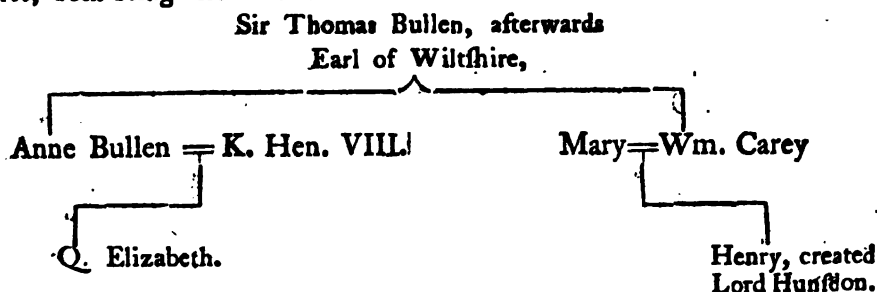
\* The translation of Hentzner's Travels is published separately from the Latin, (first printed together at Strawberry-Hill), in Doddsley's Fugitive Pieces. Vol. II. p. 275. Hentzner, on this occasion, in the original, distinguishes the *Pensioners* by the Title of SATELLITES-NOBILES. The MS. accounts of the Queen's Household agree with this in point of number. The *Band*, upon Sundays and other days, when the King goes to Chapel, has now a respectable part of the Chapel appropriated to it.

† Strype's Annals. Vol. I. p. 269. 2d. Edit.

‡ Peck's *Desiderata Curiosa*, Vol. II. p. 267.

The most splendid appearance, however, that was made by the *Band* on such occasions, seems to have been when the QUEEN honoured Henry Lord Hunsdon, her kinsman, and CAPTAIN of the *Band*, with a visit at Hunsdon House in Hertfordshire, in the year 1580\*. A Painting of this procession, made by command of Lord Hunsdon himself, is preserved, from which a Print was engraved by Vertue, and the plate, Sir, is now the property of your Society. In this Painting the GENTLEMEN of the *Band* are dressed uniformly in *Black* Cloaks (of the fashion of the times) with Ruffs about their Necks, and gold Chains over their shoulders; the other parts of their Dress are of different colours, without any adherence to uniformity†. The Queen, by this appearance of the BAND, dressed in an outward garment of *Black*, does not seem to have had any regard to the colours of *Green* and *White*, for which both her father and her sister had such a predilection; yet perhaps we may venture to date the *Black* facings of the present Uniform from this reign, though I do not know that we shall have any op-

\* The QUEEN and Henry Lord Hunsdon were maternally Cousins in the first degree, both being descended from the same Grandfather—thus:



† As the Print does not shew the Colours of the Habits of the *Band*, I have been favoured with these particulars, given from a View of the original Painting, now in the Collection of the Right Hon. Lord Digby, at Sherborne Castle, in Dorsetshire.

portunity of tracing it\*. Thus much, Sir, I have been able to give you, as to the civill line of escorte in which the Queen used the Band; but we find she likewise sometimes saw them in the field, as her sister had done, in Musters and martial exercises. In the year 1559 there was a *Tilt* performed by the *Band* before her Majesty, at Greenwich, on which occasion Lists were prepared in the Park, "for the Queen's PENSIONERS, who were to run with Spears†." Again, Sir, Stowe tells us, that on the 28th of March, 1569, "The Pensioners, well appointed in armour on horseback, mustered before the Queen's Majesty in Hyde Park, beside Westminster‡."

Towards the close of this reign it appears, from some Ordinances for the regulation of the BAND, that the PENSIONERS were allowed a *Quarterly-Waiting* in divisions, so that only one third part of the Band (and that with special leave of the QUEEN or the OFFICERS) be absent at a time. From these Articles it is evident that the GENTLEMEN (those on duty at least) had a *Table*, which they never appear to have had before, in common with the CAPTAIN, and others their superior OFFICERS, and that it extended both to *Dinner* and *Supper*. These Orders I have inserted at large, not only to establish this point, but to shew the discipline then practised in the Corps, and the *Attendance*, *Regularity*, and *Obedience* expected from it. To these Articles is ad-

\* The Queen might now chuse to differ as much as possible from Q. Mary, even in minutæ, though she temporized in them while her sister was on the throne: for on Q. Mary's accession, 1553, when the Princess Elizabeth came to the Court, her Retinue was uniformly dressed,—“in *Green* guarded with *White* Velvet, *Satin*, *Taffata*, or *Cloth*, according to their Qualities.” [Strype's Memorials, Vol. III. p. 14. from the Cott. Lib. Vitellius, F.]

† Strype's Annals, Vol. I. p. 193. 2d Edit.

‡ Chronicle.

ded the *Oath* to be taken by the LIEUTENANT and STANDARD-BEARER in this reign. They are to be found, together with the Orders made in the time of Sir Anthony Browne, fairly copied on vellum, in the Harleian Library, [N° 6142,] signed by *Sir Henry Graye*, LIEUTENANT, and by another person (perhaps the Standard-bearer) whose name is written very illegibly, and with a docquet, in these words, “ This Booke agreeth with the Booke  
 “ made in the tyme of Kynge Henry th’eight signed then with  
 “ the King’s owne hand, which remaineth with my Lord our  
 “ CAPTAIN.” By a note in another hand-writing the *Captain* is explained to have been *George* the second *Lord Hunsdon*, which circumstance will lead us nearly to the date of this promulgation; for he succeeded his father *Henry*, the first *Lord Hunsdon*, in the command of the BAND, on his decease, 1596, and died himself in the post 1603, very soon after the accession of King James.

With a transcript of these Articles, Sir, I shall close this reign.

*The ARTICLES belonging to the said GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS.*

1. First, *Her Highnes pleasure and commaundment is, that as many of the said Gentlemen Pencyoners as be or hereafter shall be ordeyned and admitted, being not lycenced by her Majestie, the Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-Bearer, be in the Queene’s Chamber of Presence every holydaye by wyne of the clocke in the fore noone, and every working daye by tenne of the clocke, and there to give attendaunce with their Axes, ready to knowe what shall be commaunded them by the Queene’s Majestie, the Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer,*

2. Item, *The said Gentlemen Pencyoners sayle not to bear their Axes, and to give attendaunce upon the Queene's Majestie every suche daye or dayes as her Grace shall come abroad to Morninge Prayer, the Proseffion, or Offeringe, and from Morninge Prayer; to Evensonge, and from Evensonge; and to keepe the place where her Highnes shall passe to and fro as large as the same will serve.*
3. Item, *Her Grace's commaundment is, That in her Majestie's progresse-tyme, or in any other removinge, or yf her Highnes doth ryde, the saide Gentlemen Pencyoners shall keepe suche places as to them shal be appointed by their Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer.*
4. Item, *The Queen's comaundment is, That aswell in her moste honorable Chamber, as in all other places where her Highnes shall passe by them, and att their Boarde, they doe use honest communicacon, with sovernes, that is to wit, without Oathes, or any Rage in talke.*
5. Item, *That all the whole Band of the said Gentlemen Pencyoners, or as many of them as be resiaunt within the Courte for the tyme, doe accompany the Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer from their Dyninge or Suppinge Place to the Queene's moste Honourable Chambers.*
6. Item, *The Queen's further pleasure is, that evry of the saide Gentlemen Pencyoners shall, at all tymes, be obedient and conformable to all suche service as shall appertaine to the Queene's Majestie, wherein she ought to be served by the said Gentlemen, or by any of them, aswell in her Grace's Chambers as in all other places where her pleasure shalbe to be served by the commaundment of such as shall, for the tyme being, have authoritie to commaund and appointe the said Gentlemen Pencyoners, as all other the Queene's servaunts.*

7. Item,

7. Item, *If the said Gentlemen Pencyoners, or any of them, doe faile the daies of their appearance in the place and howers before mencyoned, then the Checke to be for the first defaulte the losse of Three daies Wages, and for the second defaulte the losse of Sixe daies Wages, and for the third defaulte the losse of Fifteene dayes Wages.*
8. Item, *If the said Gentlemen, or any of them, faile their attendaunce the daies of the Queene's Highnes removinge, aswell at the takyng of her horse, as at her lightinge, or be absent when her Majestie goeth to Chappell to Morning Prayre, Procession, or Offeringe, and from Morning Prayre; to Evensonge, and from Evensonge; then the Check to be like damages as is expressed in the Article above declared.*
9. Item, *The Queene's Majestie's pleasure and commaundement is, That every of the saide Gentlemen Pencyoners shall have his Axe borne after him with a sufficient man, the Axe beinge cleane and bright, aswell in all places out of her Grace's Courte, as within the same Courte unto suche place or placis whereas [where] every Gentleman Pencyoner ought of duty to beare it himself, upon paine of the Queene's Highnes displeasure.*
10. Item, *Where [whereas] the Queenes Majestie's pleasure is, That every of the said Gentlemen shall have three Montbes libertie in the Yeare of not waitinge, so they take that libertie by the appointment and knowledge of her Majesty, the Captaine, Lieutenante, or Standard-Bearer, or of any of them: also when and as many of them as shall obtayne any suche lycense, they shall thereupon, ere they departe from the Courte, give acknowledgement to the Clarke of the Checke, or his Deputie, of the tyme and tymes of their said lycense, with the returnes of the same, or else the said lycense to be voyde and [they] to be checked for their absence.*

11. Item,

11. Item, *Furthermore, her Majestie's pleasure is, notwithstanding any lycence given to any of the saide Gentlemen Pencynoners by her Grace, the Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer, that the said CAPTAIN, LIEUTENANT, or STANDARD-BEARER doe always foresee that there shall not be absent at no tyme nor tymes above the third parte of the Band of the saide Gentlemen Pencynoners.*
12. Item, *That evry of the saide Gentlemen Pencynoners be well and sufficiently provided and furnished of his two Great Horses for himself and his servaunte, according to his Oathe, with Harnesse and all other habiliments to the same appertayninge, to be ready with the premisses within two daies warninge given unto them by theire Captaine, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer upon paine of forfeiture of tenne daies Wages for the first defaulte, and for the second defaulte to forfeit a month's Wages, and for the third offence to be clearly expulsed and put out of the Rome of a Gentleman Penconer, and to lose his whole Quarter's Wages.*
13. Item, *The Clarcke of the Check, or such his Deputie as shalbe thought sufficient by the Captaine, Lieutenant or Standard-bearer, to admyt, shall be every daye in the Queene's Grace's Chamber of Presence by nyne of the Clacke before Noone, there to receave the appearance of the saide Gentlemen Penconers: and also the said Clarcke, or his Deputy, to be at all other placis where the saide Gentlemen shall be appoynted to give theire attendaunce upon the Queene's Majestie.*
14. Item, *The Queene's pleasure is, That every Gentlemen Pencyoner shall pay to the Clarcke of the Checke, at the takinge of his Othe, Ten Shillings, which the Clarke oughte of dutye to have; and that is, to witte, for the givinge of every of the saide*

*saide Gentlemen his Oathe Sixe Shillings and Eight Pence, and the other three Shillings and Fower Pence is for the coppinge of the same Oathe to them mynistered, as aforesaide, and of all these Articles to be by the said Clarke delivered to every of the saide Gentlemen Pencyoners.*

*The O A T H E of the Lieutenante and Standard-Bearer \*.*

*You shall sweare to be trewe and faithfull subiecte and servaunte unto our Sovereigne Lady Elizabeth by the Grace of God Queene of England, Fraunce, and Ireland, Defender of the Faith, &c. in earth supreme heade of the Churches of England and Ireland, according to the limitacon of the Acte made for the stablissement of her Highnes succession in the Crowne ymperiall of this her Realm of England and Ireland. And you shall truly and diligently give your attendaunce in the Rome of Lieutenaunte [or Standard-bearer] of the Band of her Majestie's Gentlemen Pencioners. You shalbe retayned to nae pson ne psones of no degree or condition by Oathe, Livery, Badge, Promise, or otherwise, but only to her Grace, withoute her especial licence: And you shall not hereafter heare or knowe of any tbinge that shalbe hurtful or prejudiciall to her moste Royall pson, or to her Heires in forme abovesaid, especially in Treason, but you shall withstand it to th' uttermoste of your power, and the same, with all diligence to you possible, reveale and disclofe to the Queene's Highnes, or to your Captaine for the tyme being, or in his absence to some of her Majestie's Privy Councell, or for wante of them to the Lieutenante of the said Gentlemen Pencioners, or to suche other as you shall knowe will discover the same to her Grace. You shall be continewally furnished of double Horse and Men, and provide that your self and your men may be alsoe.*

\* Mutatis mutandis.

*well furnished with Harnesse according to your Rome, to serve the Queene's Majestie, in tyme of neede, or otherwise for her Grace's pleasure. You shall truely and diligently to your power observe and keepe from this day forward all and every such reasonable Articles, Rules, and Ordinaunces as shall be devised by the Queene's Majestie, and set forth, signed with her Grace's hand, for your better Usage and Order. And all suche causes as by waye of secrecy and counsell shalbe shewed unto you by the Queene's Majestie, the Captaine, or by his Lieutenant, you shall keepe secrete without discoveringe of the same to any person or persons till you shall be thereunto comaunded. And alsoe you shall make your Muster in suche Harnesse and other Habilyments of Warre and uppon such Horses as shalbe your owne proper goodes and none other mans. And this you shall well and truely observe and keepe, and serve the Queene's Highnes in the saide Rome of her Majestie's Lieutenant [or Standard-bearer.] soe helpe you God, and by the holy Contents of this Booke.*

The BAND, Sir, in point of splendor and respectability, seems to have passed its meridian with the Demise of the *Queen*, as very soon after that event it fell into dis-esteem, owing to the partialities of her successor, which is evident from accounts of unquestionable authority. The state of it on the KING's accession cannot better appear than from the following Letter from *George Lord Hunsdon*, CAPTAIN of the PENSIONERS, addressed to K. JAMES, immediately on the QUEEN's death, and before her Obsequies were performed. We shall there find a description of the BAND as it stood at that period, conformably with what we have before seen in the *Queen's* life-time; from whence, we may further discern that its primary intention was then adhered to in Discipline, Dignity, and in the *Quality* of the GENTLEMEN themselves, as well as that its original appearance in Accoutrements, and other military Appendages was likewise preserved.

before he came  
to the

foreign, among  
we unto the  
not the least,  
my Lord and  
ourable office,

AND of GEN-

I have to this  
whereof I hum-

on, and with-

nd Allegiance

the Institution,

BAND. They

the LIEUTE-

CHEQUE, and

it and antient-

ions to *Earls*,

pecially recom-

without any

n Blood. *Her*

le found great

efence of their

stant employ-

abroad; info-

y to breed up

its, *Counsellors*

resent-States, viz.

nal, or any other

“ of

well furnish  
the Queene  
Grace's plea  
serve and ke  
Articles, R  
Majestie, a  
better Usage  
cye and coun  
the Captain  
out discover  
thereunto con  
Harnesse and  
shalbe your  
shall well an  
nes in the A  
bearer.] for A

The BAR  
to have pat  
very soon at  
partialities  
unquestiona  
cession can  
ter from G  
addressed to  
and before  
a description  
ably with  
from whence  
was then at  
of the GEN  
pearance in  
likewise pre



LORD HUNSDON.

*First Cousin to Queen Elizabeth  
Genl. - Captain Genl. Pensioner*

*Published August 1. 1814 by G. Smeeton, St Martin's Lane.*

A Letter from *George Lord Hunsdon* to K. JAMES, before he came to England, upon the decess of QUEEN ELIZABETH\*.

“ Most mighty and most gracious *Liege* and *Sovereign*, among  
 “ many other Honours and Duties which I do owe unto the  
 “ memory of my late deceased *Sovereign* this is not the least,  
 “ that it pleased *her Majesty* upon the decess of my Lord and  
 “ Father, and who also enjoyed the same honourable office,  
 “ to grace me with the CAPTAINSHIP of her BAND of GEN-  
 “ TLEMEN PENSIONERS, which Place and Dignity I have to this  
 “ present enjoyed: for the further continuance whereof I hum-  
 “ bly desire to understand your MAJESTY’s direction, and with-  
 “ all do think it a matter agreeable to my Duty and Allegiance  
 “ plainly and truly to inform your MAJESTY of the Institution,  
 “ Nature, Quality, and Service of this *Honourable* BAND. They  
 “ are in all *Fifty* GENTLEMEN, besides MYSELF, the LIEUTE-  
 “ NANT, STANDARD-BEARER, CLERK of the CHEQUE, and  
 “ GENTLEMAN HARBINGER, chosen out of the best and antient-  
 “ est Families of England, and some of them Sons to *Earls*,  
 “ *Barons*, *Knights*, and *Esquires*, Men thereunto especially recom-  
 “ mended for their worthyness and sufficiency, without any  
 “ Stain or Taint of dishonour, or disparagement in Blood. *Her*  
 “ *Majesty* and other Princes her predecessors have found great  
 “ use of their service, as well in the guard and defence of their  
 “ Royal persons, as also in sundry other important employ-  
 “ ments, as well civil as military, at home and abroad; inso-  
 “ much as it hath served them always as a nursery to breed up  
 “ *Deputies* of *Ireland*, *Ambassadors* into foreign parts, *Counsellors*

\* This Letter is printed in some of Dr. Chamberlayne’s *Present-States*, viz. 1737. and 1748; but I have never been able to find the Original; or any other Copy of it.

“ of State, Captains of the Guard, Governors of Places, and  
 “ Commanders in the Wars, both by Land and Sea. Withall  
 “ I cannot omit to signify to your MAJESTY their Alacrity and  
 “ Affection wherewith, upon the decease of *her Highness*, they  
 “ did embrace your MAJESTY's title and cause; insomuch that,  
 “ upon my motion, they did most willingly offer themselves  
 “ to a strong and settled combination, by a solemn Oath and  
 “ Vow, to defend and prosecute your MAJESTY's lawful Right  
 “ and Title by themselves, their Friends, Allies, and Follow-  
 “ ers (being no contemptible portion of this kingdom) to the  
 “ last drop of their Blood, against all impugnors whatsoever;  
 “ with which humble and dutifull desires of theirs to serve  
 “ your MAJESTY, I thought it my part and duty to acquaint  
 “ you, and withall humbly desire to know your MAJESTY's  
 “ pleasure and resolution as concerning them. I have caused  
 “ them to remain all about the Court with their *Horses, Ar-*  
 “ *mour*, and *Men*, to attend the Body of our late *Royal Mistress*,  
 “ and being generally all desirous to wait upon your MAJESTY  
 “ at your entry into this kingdom, as those that would be  
 “ loth to be second to any in all obsequious and serviceable Du-  
 “ ties to your MAJESTY, wherein I humbly desire your MA-  
 “ JESTY's further direction,

“ And ever desire Almighty God, &c.”

If it be necessary to add to this account, as here left us by  
 the then CAPTAIN, it will only tend to shew that the BAND  
 lost much of its Dignity early in the reign of King James.  
 This comparative view of it, comprized in so very short a pe-  
 riod, cannot be better discovered than from the following testi-  
 mony of *John Earl of Clare* (who had been in the BAND when  
 Sir John Holles) delivered in these words, by his kinsman Mr.  
 Gervase Holles—“ I have heard the *Earl of Clare* say that when  
 “ he was PENSIONER to the QUEEN, he did not know a worse  
 “ man

“ man of the whole BAND than himself; and that all the  
 “ world knew he had then an inheritance of 4,000 *l.* a year.  
 “ It was the constant custom of that QUEEN,” continues Mr.  
 Holles, “ to call out of all counties in the kingdom the *Gentle-*  
 “ *men* of the greatest hopes, and the best fortune and families,  
 “ and with those to fill the more honourable Rooms [Places]  
 “ of her Household Servants, by which she honoured them,  
 “ obliged their Kindred and Alliance, and fortified Herself\*.”

From hence we may observe, Sir, that it was not the emolument or any lucrative motive which in that reign made gentlemen solicitous to be admitted into the BAND; but the pure dignity of the post itself, added to the laudable ambition of being employed in public characters abroad, or of filling high offices at home.

Mr. Holles then goes on with some asperity, and is more severe upon King James and his adherents than I chuse to repeat; adding that when most of those rooms were filled by such inconsiderable persons as were preferred by favourites, or as money introduced, the better sort of the Gentry forsook the Court; and among the rest Sir John Holles. The Queen's studious attachment to the external honour of her Court by the choice of proper officers, as well in point of personal appearance, as in birth and education, is given us by Francis Osborne, Esq; who lived near the time of which he writes; though it must be confessed, that from one instance which he mentions, the Queen seems to have carried her attention sometimes to a frivolous nicety †. “ This Princess,” says he, “ in imitation of her Fa-

\* Collins's Historical Collections of the families of Cavendish, Holles, &c. p. 84.

† Osborne's Works, p. 374. This gentleman was then a Cadet of the family seated at Chickands, in Bedfordshire, the head of which is the present Sir George Osborne, Bart. &c.

“ then, Henry VIII. did admit none about her for PENSION-  
 “ ers, *Privy-Chamber-Men*\*, *Squires of the Body*, *Carvers*, *Cup-  
 “ bearers*, *Sewers*, &c. (which were not a few in number) but  
 “ persons of Stature, Strength, and Birth, refusing to owe her  
 “ consent (demanded before any could be admitted to the  
 “ meanest place in her house) because *he wanted a tooth*: yet  
 “ was never known to desert any for age or other infirmity,  
 “ after once enrolled, but either continued them, or, upon their  
 “ discharge, gave them considerable and well-paid pensions.  
 “ As for her *Guard*, *Ushers*†, *Porters*, and all attending below  
 “ stairs, they were of a no less extraordinary size, than acti-  
 “ vity for Shooting, throwing the Bar, the Weight, Wrestling,  
 “ &c.”

But to return, Sir, more immediately to the *Pensioners*:  
 Agreeably to what is stated in *Lord Hurford's* Letter—that the  
 BAND was a Seminary from which were derived Statesmen, and  
 Men of Eminence, in various departments, several may be  
 traced who arose to high Employments, and one indeed became  
 ultimately *Lord Chancellor*. This was *Str Christopher Hatton*,  
 who, in the Reign of Queen Elizabeth, from being one of the  
*Fifty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS* was afterwards successively;  
 a *Gentleman of the Privy-Chamber*—*Captain of the Yeomen of  
 the Guard*—*Vice-Chamberlain*—a *Knight of the Garter*—and, at  
 last, *HIGH-CHANCELLOR*‡. Nothing could do more honour  
 to the BAND than that one of it should arise to the first civil Em-  
 ployment in the kingdom: in so mixed a group, however, we

\* This was the term given to the *Gentlemen of the Privy-Chamber*, and is to  
 be met with on various occasions.

† By these are meant *Yeomen-Ushers*, a branch of the Yeomen of the Guard.

‡ See *Vicomte Hatton*, in *Collins's Peerage*, 1735, and *Styep's Annals*, Vol.  
 II. in Appendix, p. 158.

must expect, on a near inspection, to find a variety of characters; and accordingly, on the other hand, I am now to mention another of this Corps, who, in the Reign before us, disgraced his Post as much as *Sir Christopher* had before reflected Lustre upon it. This Gentleman was of the ancient and noble name of *Percy*, Cousin to *Henry* then *Earl of Northumberland*, CAPTAIN of the BAND, and who, unfortunately both for himself and his Kinsman, was deeply engaged in the Popish Plot. He appears to have been the most active and atrocious abettor of that Conspiracy, insomuch that a particular Proclamation was issued (1605) containing not only a promise of Pardon to any of his accomplices who should apprehend him; but offering a Reward of *One Thousand Pounds at the least*, to any that should bring him alive, as much insight was expected from his Confession towards the discovery of his Associates, and the unravelling that mysterious affair \*. Mr. *Percy* did not suffer the disgrace of an execution, as many others did, being killed with a few of his confederates, in a rencontre with the Posse-Comitatus in the country whither they had fled: but the *Earl of Northumberland* was by a sentence of the Star-Chamber, fined Thirty Thousand Pounds, and not only deprived of all his Places, but condemned to perpetual imprisonment for misprision of Treason in admitting his Kinsman, whom he knew to be a Popish Recusant, into the BAND, without tendering to him the Oath. The Earl was accordingly committed to the Tower, where he remained fifteen years †. All this appears from

\* This Proclamation is extant (among others relative to this business) in a printed Copy, published by Authority, 1609.

† More particulars of Mr. *Percy*, relative to the Conspiracy, not to our immediate purpose, may be seen in *Rapin's Hist. of Engl.* [Vol. II. p. 171. Fol.] It is, however, worth observing, that the fate of some of the Conspirators who fled was

from Dugdale's Baronage—Wilson's Life of King James—and from the Trial of Henry Garnett, in the State-Trials; but I am possessed of a larger detail of what passed in the Star-Chamber on that occasion, from a MS. in the Cottonian Library. [Vespasian, XIV. fol. 451.] which I give in a Note. It is written in the form of a Letter, though without Name, Date, or Address; and seems to have been drawn up, either by a Practiser in that Court, or by another person present at the Trial, and has the appearance of being a rough copy of what was sent to some gentleman of consequence, then at a distance from London \*.

Thus

was singularly apposite to their intended crime; for two or three of them, who had fortified themselves in a house in which they were besieged, lost their lives by the explosion of a barrel of their own *Gun-powder*. [Harrington's *Nugæ Antiquæ*, Vol. II. p. 239.]

\* S I R,

The Proccesse against my Lord of Northumberland, on Fryday was sevenight (as all other matters of that nature) may be divided into two general Heads,

1. The Crimes objected against him, and,
2. The Punishment imposed.

The Crimes, which, under the name of Contemptes, were layed to his charge, I mean those whereon, out of his own verbal confession, his sentence was grounded, were (besides many other of less importance) principally Three.

1. The first was his employing of *Percy* a year and a half before the Queen's death into Scotland, to procure of his Majesty a mitigation for Catholiques, and some toleration of their religion: and that the King's favour in this behalfe might be wholly at the disposal of my Lord of Northumberland, that his Lordship might hold the Catholiques in a kind of dependency and suspense, till his Majesty might have peaceable entry and quiet possession. By which means, said Mr. Attorney, he went about to derogate from the King's authority, by stealing away the heartes of his subjects, and making himself head of the most factious and traitorous faction in the kingdom.

The second was his making of *Percy* a PENSIONER.

1. knowing him to be a jesuitical and turbulent Papist.
2. without his Majesty's privity.

3. Without

Thus much, Sir, I have taken the liberty of adding, with respect to individuals of very different complexions, and will now proceed with the aggregate body.

The principal circumstance remaining to be observed in this Reign is, that the *Table* which was provided for the Band in the establishment of Queen Elizabeth, seems to have been commuted for an equivalent in *Board-wages*: for I have before me an Order on the Exchequer, signed by the King, in the year 1616, for an imprest of *Six Thousand Pounds* for *Wages* and *Board-wages* then due to the *Officers* and the *Band* in general\*. This exchange does not seem to have taken place till within a very short time before the date of the Order, as it there carries the appearance of a *new* Regulation, and is called an *Encrease* of *Wages* and *Allowances* to the whole *Band*, and further di-

3. Without giving him the Oth.

4. And that under a kind of fraud and treachery; for being demanded whether he had sworn *Percy*, or no? he said he had<sup>1</sup>.

The Third was his writing of Letters to his tenants in the North, without the King's Licence, during the time of his restraint; not for the apprehension of *Percy*; but that they should have a care of his Rents, that they might not come to *Percy's* fingers, giving *Percy* thereby a watchword to escape, and so preferring the safety of a little Money before the taking of a capital Traytor; and consequently before the safety of the King and the whole kingdom.

The Censure or Punishment was *Thirty Thousand Pounds* fine, the losse of all his offices and dignities growing to him by the King's favour, and perpetual imprisonment<sup>2</sup>.

\* The Original is in his Majesty's State-paper Office.

<sup>1</sup> This was covinous—for I have been informed from the most respectable authority, that the Earl permitted Thomas Percy, his Lordship's next brother, to take the Oath, instead of Thomas Percy the traitor.

<sup>2</sup> We are told by Sir Bulstrode Whitlocke, [Memorials, p. 298.], that the Earl felt the severity of his sentence with so much indignation, that he was afterwards with difficulty prevailed upon to accept his release, when procured at the suit of his son-in-law, the Lord Viscount Doncaster; saying, that "nothing of stain upon his Honour could be made out, as to the business of the Gun-powder Treason." The Decree of the Court of Star-Chamber may be seen at large in the Harleian MSS. N. 589.

rects,

rects, that for the future those stipulated Payments should be made *quarterly*.

It may be observed, however, that, though by this Order the *Wages* and *Allowances* were enlarged in general, and in compensation of the loss of Diet at the King's charge, yet it is not specified in what proportions the sum allowed shall be divided; so that we cannot collect with accuracy the advance that was then made towards the *present* individual emoluments of the *Officers* and *Band* respectively \*. The Books relative to the *Band*, which I have seen, do not reach this period by a very great number of years; neither can any thing but scattered accounts be expected to have survived the turbulent parts of the following Reign, and the Inter-regnum which ensued. That I may advance nothing without Authority, I have added King James's Warrant for the above Payment in a Note †.

The

\* Dr. Chamberlayne, in his *Present State* of the year 1748, says, the *Gentlemen Pensioners* formerly had a *Table*, which was taken away by King James, and that in lieu thereof they had 50 l. each allowed for *Board Wages*: but we are not there told in what degrees the *Pay* of the *OFFICERS* was advanced.

† JAMES R.

JAMES, by the Grace of God, &c. To the Treasurer and Under-Treasurer of our Exchequer, greeting. Whereas Wee are pleased, out of our gracious and princely disposition to make an encrease of the wages and allowances of the *Captain*, *Lieutenant*, *Standard-bearer*, *Clark of the Cheque*, *Gentlemen Pensioners*, *Gentlemen at Armes*, and *Harbinger*, for the better enabling them to attend upon us, in our service, the same not to exceed in any one year the sum of *Six Thousand Pounds*; This shalbe therefore to will and commaund you of such our Treasure as from tyme to tyme shall be and remayne in the receipte of our said Exchequer, to cause payment to be made, from tyme to tyme, unto Sir Henry Myn, Knt. now Paymaster of the said *Band*, and to the Paymaster hereafter for the tyme being, of all suche some and sommes of money as shall appeare to be due unto them the said *Captaine*, *Lieutenant*, and the rest of the *Officers* and *Band* respectively, upon *Quarterly Rolles*, subscribed by the said *Captaine*,

In this Reign, Sir, I first discern a *Pay-Master* peculiarly appropriated to the BAND. Thitherto they had been paid at some of the Publick Offices, in common with the rest of the Royal Household. It was most probably on occasion of the composition just mentioned, wherein *Wages* and *Board-wages* were thus consolidated, that a particular *Pay-Master* was appointed. The very words of King James's Warrant are of themselves sufficient to ascertain this matter, which are, that payment be made from time to time, "unto Sir Henry Mynn, Knt. *now* Pay-Master " of the said BAND, and to the Pay-Master hereafter for the " time being, &c."

In all the former establishments which I have seen, no *Pay-Master* appears: but in that of the year 1615 \* Sir Henry Mynn is specified to have had the office, in which he is likewise found in the years 1616 and 1617 †. The salary annexed to this appointment, in the year 1615, appears to have been 100 marks—but in the two following years I find it to have been only 50*l.* but it is then said to have carried with it *other allow-*

tain, or in his absence, by the Lieutenant, or in the absence of them by the Head of the Standard-bearer and Clark of the Checque for the tyme being, to whome any Wages or Board Wages shalbe due, and how muche everie of them (his Checque defalked to our Use) ought to receive of the same, the first payment thereof to begin and take place from the tyme of their last Payment, and so to continue Quarterly during our Pleasure. To be taken, had, and received, to the said Paymaster, respectively, without any account, imprest or other charge to be set upon him or them for the same, or for anie parte thereof. And theis our Letters, &c. Given, &c.

By Order of Mr. Secretary Lake.

1616.

Exedit apud Bletsee, Vicesimo Quarto die Julii, Anno Regis Jacobi Decimo Quarto.

P. WINDEHANK.

\* In the Coll. of Arma.

† MS. in the Library of the Earl of Shelburne.

ances, which I interpret to mean a small Poundage on the money which passed through the hands of the Pay-Master: thus much however is clear, that the Post was not beneath the acceptance of persons of rank, for I find afterwards in the following reign (anno 1635) on the authority of a MS. which I have seen, that it was then enjoyed likewise by a Knight, viz. Sir John Hales\*.

As the Post carries with it no salary whatever at present, there is reason to suppose that the *per-centage* might afterwards be increased and deemed a sufficient emolument for the trouble accompanying the Payment, and that the original *salary* was applied to enlarge the Pay of some *Officer* of the BAND, perhaps the *Clerk of the Cheque*, whose stipend, then only 100 marks (or 66*l.* 13*s.* 4*d.*) at the most, was soon after the Restoration advanced to 120*l.* per annum.

The Reign of King Charles I. Sir, gives us but now and then a momentary view of the BAND. The number was 50, according to the account given by Mons. la Serre, who saw them on duty in the year 1637, when Mary de Medicis, the Queen Mother of France, came into England to visit her daughter, our Queen Henrietta. He compares them with the *Gens d'Armes* of France, and adds, that each *PENSIONER* had three Horses well caparisoned†. The *CAPTAIN* of the BAND was then William Cecil [the second] *Earl of Salisbury*, who, together

\* The MS. alluded to was the property of the late George Scott, Esq; of Woolston-Hall, in Essex, whose Library was sold by Auction, 1781.

† “ Une Compagnie de cinquante Gentilshommes de la *Bande des Pensionnaires* qui sont comme *Gens d'Armes*, entretiennent chacun trois chevaux selon l'Ordre de leur Etablissement dont ils tirent du Roy *Pension* annuelle, marchoit à la suite de son *Lieutenant*; mais tous ensemble bien montez, & en fort bel equipage.” [Histoire d' l'Entrée de la Reyne Mere. A Londres, 1639. Reprinted, by Mr. Gough, 1775.]

with

with the *Earl of Morton*, CAPTAIN of the YEOMEN, supported Mons. de la Masure, the *Lieutenant* of the French Queen's *Garde du Corps* \*.

On the triumphal entry of the King into the City of London, after his return from Scotland, 1641, his MAJESTY was escorted, among other the Royal attendants, by "The *Earl of Salisbury*, CAPTAIN of the PENSIONERS, followed by the " GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, with their *Pole-Axes*, all mounted, with Pistols at their Saddles. And afterwards at dinner, " in the West part of the Hall (Guild-Hall) below the Gate on " the South side, was a long Table placed for his Majesty's PENSIONERS †."

The

\* *Idem*. p. 33.

† Lord Somers's *Tracts*, Vol. IV. pp. 159, 161. Anciently, when *Revels* were kept during Christmas, at the Court, the same festivities were observed in the principal Law Societies. On these occasions there was elected from the Gentlemen of the Society one who was styled the *Christmas-Prince*, who had his *Great Officers* and *Guards* about him, and among the rest his PENSIONERS. It may not be amiss to transcribe the account given of the Establishment and Retinue of the *Christmas-Prince*, A. D. 1635, as it has a reference to the subject before us, from a letter written at that time by the Rev. George Garrard to the Earl of Strafforde, then Lord Deputy of Ireland.—"The Middle-Temple-House," says he, "have set up a *Prince* who carries himself in great state. . . . He hath all " his *Great Officers* attending him,—Lord Keeper, Lord Treasurer, Eight White " *Staves* at the least, CAPTAIN of his PENSIONERS, Captain of his Guard, and two " *Chaplains*, who on Sunday last preached before him. . . My Lord Chamber- " lain lent him two fair Cloths of Estate, one hung up in the Hall, under which " he dined, the other in his Privy-Chamber: he is served on the knees, and all " that come to see him kiss his hand on their knee. My Lord of Salisbury hath lent " him *Pole-Axes* for his PENSIONERS. He sent to my Lord of Holland, his Justice " in Eyre, for Venison, which he willingly sends him; to the Lord Mayor and " Sheriffs of London for Wine, all obey. *Twelfth-Day* was a great day: going " to the Chapel many Petitions were delivered to him, which he gave to his Ma-

The next time we have opportunity of observing the *Band* is upon a very different occasion: viz. when the King found it necessary to take refuge at Oxford, in the year 1642.

A seditious Preacher had thrown out some words from the Pulpit, which so alarmed the KING and his Council, that it was not thought safe to trust his Majesty's Person any where without an extraordinary guard. It was therefore commanded by his Majesty, with advice of the Council, among other securities, "That as often as his Majesty did ride abroad, the *Captain* of his *Majesty's Guard* [*i. e.* of the Yeomen] and the "LIEUTENANT of his PENSIONERS, with *Four* of the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, should ride continually near his Majesty's person, and suffer none of mean condition, or unknown to them, to come near his Majesty \*." The suspicions ran that assassination was intended, as that which dropped from the Preacher was similar to what was recollected to have been insinuated to the public by the same channel, previous to the murder of the Duke of Buckingham by Felton †. The *Pensioners* are again mentioned as part of the escorte of the Queen, when she made her entry into Oxford in the same year ‡. After that period, as the KING's difficulties daily encreased, we cannot expect to hear more of this his Body-Guard; for soon afterwards his State gradually diminished, and his person fell

"sters of the Requests. He hath a Favourite, whom, with some others, Gentlemen of great Quality, he knighted, at his return from Church, and dined "in great State. It costs this Prince 2,000 l. out of his own Purse." [Vid. *Stratford's Letters*, Vol. I. p. 507, Dublin Edition.] For a further and more general account of these *Revels* I refer to Dugdale's *Orig. Jurid.* and to Gerard Legh's *Accedence of Armory*.

\* *Mercurius Aulicus*, p. 51.

† *Idem*, p. 50.

‡ *Idem*, p. 373.

into

into the keeping of those who guarded it for a very different purpose.

I shall now, Sir, once more, and for the last time, trouble you with Ordinances for the government of the *Band*. The copy which I have before me, is indeed without date; but that is ascertainable to have been of the year 1633, from a letter of the Duke of Montagu, who was CAPTAIN of the BAND 1734, which will be given at length in its proper place.— Though these Orders, with a very little qualification, border on those of Queen Elizabeth, yet I apprehend they are *in effect* the last; for those of King Charles II. and King James II. are but mere transcripts of them.

If they seem too rigid for our times, yet they will be found characteristic of the Reign of King Charles I. and will confirm an observation of Lord Clarendon, who tells us, that the King “ kept State to the full, which made his Court very orderly; “ no man presuming to be seen in a place where he had no “ pretence to be \*.”

ORDERS of KING CHARLES I. A. D. 1633.

*The Band of our Pensioners having the Honour to be our nearest Guard, and to have their daily access into our Presence Chamber, WE think fit and ordain, that from henceforth they be freely chosen by our Knowledge, out of our best Families, and such as have best Education in several counties of our kingdoms, that all our loving subjects of best Rank and Worth may find themselves interested in the Trust and Honour of our Service.*

*And as many of our Gentlemen Pensioners as are, or shall be hereafter admitted, and not licensed to be absent by Us or their*

\* Hist. of the Rebellion, Vol. III. Part 1. Oxford Edit. Oct. 1717.

Captain,

*Captain, or in his absence by the Lieutenant or Standard-bearer of the Band, shall be in our Chamber of Presence every Festival-Day, Holy-day, or Sermon-day, by Nine of the clock in the forenoon, and every Working-day by Ten of the clock, and shall there give attendance with their Axes, ready to know what shall be commanded them by Us, or their said Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer.*

*They shall not fail to bear their Axes, and to give attendance on Us every such day as we shall come abroad to Morning-Prayer, and from the same, and to and from Evening-Prayer, in the Great Closet, and shall keep the Place where We passe to and fro, as the largeness of the roome shall serve.*

*In our Progresse, or other Remove when we ride, they shall keep such places as to them shall be appointed by Us, or by the aforesaid Officers.*

*They shall at all times be obedient, and performe all such services as shall appertaine unto Us, and wherein We ought to be served by them, as well in Chambers as in all other places where our pleasure shall be to be served, by the commandment of such as shall for the time have authority to command and appoint the said Gentlemen Pensioners, and all other our servants.*

*If any of them fail their duties of appearance at their days in the Place and Hours before-mentioned, they shall be checkt for the first fault with the losse of Three days Wages, for the second with the losse of Six, and the third of Fifteen.*

*In the like manner they shall be checkt if they fail their attendance in the day of our Remove, as well at the taking of our Horse, as at our lighting, or when we go to or from the Chappel, at Evening or Morning-Prayers.*

*The said Gentlemen Pensioners shall, every of them have his Axe borne after him by a sufficient Man, said Axe being cleane and bright, as well in all places out of Court as within, unto such place where*

*where every such Gentleman Pensioner ought to bear it himself, upon pain of our displeasure.*

*Whereas, by Institution and antient Order every Gentleman Pensioner was allowed but Three Months Liberty in the Year of not waiting, and that by the appointment of the KING, their Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer; and so as ere they departed the Court they should give notice to the Clerk of the Cheque, or his Deputy, of the time of their Licence, with return of the same, or else the said Licence to be void, and they to be cheekt for their absence—which Order afterward our Predecessor [Henry VIII.], at the humble sute of Sir Anthony Browne, their Captain, enlarged by Quarter-Waiting by course, yet so as the one half of the Band was required continually to attend, withoute any excuse of sickness or otherwise, but that he or they that did fortune to be sick or have any other lett within his Quarter should, for the time of absence, find one, his Companion, that was out of his Quarter, to wait and furnish his place, or else to be in danger of the Cheque; and the other half of them for the mean time of their Half-year, so by their Quarters to be taken at liberty.*

*This Order thus enlarged to a Quarterly-attendance, with the conditions thereof, we ratifie and confirm:—Notwithstanding any Licence given to any of the said Gentlemen Pensioners by Us; the Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer shall always foresee that there be not absent at any time above Half the BAND.*

*The said Gentlemen-Pensioners were also required by their Institution to be well and sufficiently furnished and provided every one with his Two Great Horses for himself and his servant, according to his Oath, with his Arms and all other Habiliments to the same appertaining, to be ready therewith within two days warning given to them by their Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer upon payne of forfeiture of Ten Days Wages*

*for their first default, and for the second default to forfeit a Month's Wages, and for the third to be clearly expelled and put out of the roome of a Gentleman Pensioner, and to loose his whole Quarter's Wages. Which proportion of Two Great Horses was then, in regard of the liberty granted of Quarter-Waiting, increased to the finding of Three Great Horses furnished accordingly;—and this number, the rather for the late encrease of Pay\*, We require to be furnished by every Gentleman Pensioner for our service in their places upon the penalty above-named.*

*The whole Band of Gentlemen Pensioners shall give their attendance at the Four principal Feasts of the Year, viz. Christmas, Easter, Whitsontide, and Allhallontide, and at St. George's Feast, and at our Coronation-day, under the Cheque as they do now.*

*And notwithstanding the great liberty of their Quarter-waiting, they are required neverthelesse to be at all times in such readinesse that when warning shall be given them from their Officers, they and every of them shall, according to the same, repair to the Court, and give such attendance for the time as shall be appointed unto them, using for that season, be it in their Quarter or otherwise, no less diligence than in their Quarter they ought to doe.*

*The Clark of Cheque, or such his Deputy as shall be thought fit and sufficient by the Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer to admit, shall be every day in the Chamber of Presence at nine o'clock in the forenoon, there to receive the appearance of the said Gentlemen Pensioners. And also the Clark or his Deputy shall be at all other places where the said Gentlemen Pensioners shall be appointed to give their attendance for our service.*

\* Meaning, I conceive, the Composition for the Table, which, as we have seen, took place in the preceding Reign; or some other advancement in addition to that made about the same time by King James. See the King's Order for the Payment of the Band, A. D. 1616, p. 64, antea.

*The accustomed Oath shall be taken by every Gentleman-Pensioner, at his admission.*

*They shall be mustered every Quarter, or Monthly, by their Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-Bearer.*

During the *Protectorate*, Sir, we cannot suppose that *Cromwell* would in any degree retain the identical Guard which had hitherto been the Appendage to the Person of A KING, deeming them of course inimical to his interests; though the Usurper himself adopted a similar Establishment. Whether the *Royal BAND of PENSIONERS* was dismissed in form, or turned out of doors (like the Parliament) nothing is left to ascertain. There is, as one would imagine, a chasm in the Books of the Council-Office, from the death of King Charles the First to the Restoration; and *Thurloe's State Papers* do not go to such minutiae. *Oliver* was far from being regardless of his personal safety; on the contrary, he was extremely jealous of every body, not known to him, and at all times kept a vigilant eye to his security. Roger Coke tells us, "he never stirred abroad without strong Guards, wearing armour under his cloaths, and offensive Arms too, never came back the common Road, or the same way he went, and always passing with great speed; had many Locks and Keys for the Doors of his Houses; seldom slept above Three nights in one chamber, nor in any which had not two or three Back-doors, and Guards at all of them\*." It is evident, from the circumstance of *Oliver's* fall from the coach-box, in Hyde-Park, that he then had Pistols about him, notwithstanding his Guards were at hand, for one of the Pistols, by the force of the fall, went off in his pocket †.

The

\* Coke's Detection, sub. anno, 1656.

† *Thurloe's State-Papers*. The story of *Oliver* driving his Coach with six untuly horses, may seem, when simply told, to have been merely a frolick; but Dr.

The *Protector*, in the height of his Popularity, seems to have had when collectively taken, a respectable Body-guard of 140 Horse. Forty of these were originally his Garde du Corps, the rest seeming to have been reserved for occasions of State; or defence if required. This escorte of 40 was afterwards reduced to 20, to be in constant attendance, at which time, by the diminution of his guard, one is led to suppose that *Cromwell* felt himself secure in the hearts of the Army and People, in which he was very soon afterwards happily mistaken. These 20 *Gentlemen*, we may assimilate to the *Pensioners* (for such indeed they are styled) and the rest of the troop seem not to have been of inferior condition. The letter which I have given in a note, contains my authority for this account \*.

As.

Bates, in his *Blonchus*, [p. 299, Edit. 1676.] gives a medical reason for it. The *Protector*, he says, was much troubled with the Stone and Gravel, and that he used to drink plentifully of small diuretic liquors, and afterwards by violent exercise on horseback, or by the jolting of a Carriage, provoked a discharge of what was offensive in his bladder or kidneys. He would ride hard, we are told, even in his *Promenade à cheval*, and on the above occasion seems to have chosen the Coach-box, as he then would feel more of the motion of the Carriage than he did within it.

\* "Nieuport, the Dutch Ambassador, to the States General.

"High and Mighty Lords;

"My Lords, a few days since the Life-guard of Horse of the Lord Protector,

"which formerly consisted of Forty persons most young *Gentlemen* of this nation,

"was reformed after such a manner, that Twenty of them are to be employed as

"*Ordinary Pensioners*, who are to wait continually upon the Person of his High-

"ness, &c.

"Dated Westminster,

"Mar. 10, 1656, N. S \*."

\* Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. IV. p. 567.

As to the appearance of these guards, we find them thus described in an intercepted letter of the 4th of April, 1656, very soon after the above-mentioned Reform—"Munday last," says the writer, "the Life-guards muster'd in Tuttle-fields; they are the best Horse and properest Fellowes I have seene\*."

Towards the close of his life, however, the Protector seems to have fallen off in his State, and having sunk much in the good opinion of the Army, was forced to take up with a very mean and unprincely Escorte. Thus, if we may credit Roger Coke (who seems to spare neither Kings nor Demi-Kings) he tells us, "that *Cromwell* having so little dependence on his army, set up another of Voluntiers, to have Eight Pounds a year a-piece, to be ready to serve him. These were a Company of fellows who, as their pay was little, so were their horses jades, and lean; and a Troop of the Army-Horse would beat ten of them, yet they served *Cromwell* so far as to seize malignants whenever he sent them, and were spies over all suspected persons, and to inform him of their demeanour†." The confidence of the Army had been *Cromwell's* sheet anchor, and Terror his rule of Government, both at home and abroad: when the former was lost, his power began to dissolve apace, and we have an opportunity of observing from the last account of his Body Guard, that the Protector himself was then in want of protection, being as much deserted by his former adherents from principles of abhorrence, as the

N. B. The other *Twenty*, the letter adds, were joined to the 100 elected Horse, out of all the Regiments, so that the Life-guard of Horse itself [exclusive of the above mentioned Pensioners] consisted of 120 men, besides the Captain and Four Lieutenants.

\* Thurloe's State Papers, Vol. IV. 675.

† Coke's Detection. sub ann. 1658.

KING had been by his friends from fears of impending anarchy and desolation.

At the Restoration, Sir, upon the KING's public Entry, such of his late Majesty's PENSIONERS as were living voluntarily attended (though not then re-established) deemed themselves, I presume, rather suspended than disbanded \*. They were regularly embodied very soon afterwards, and resumed their functions; for in July following, when the KING dined at Guild-hall, the *Band* went on foot on each side of his Majesty's Coach under the command of their CAPTAIN (*Henry Wentworth, Earl of Cleveland*) with *Pistols* in their hands †. In the Processions, from the Tower to Westminster on the day before the Coronation, and on the Coronation-day (1661) they are found in their usual situations ‡.

Having no official books, nor any printed authorities to guide us for some years after the Restoration, little transpires further than that the BAND, in about thirteen years afterwards, was reduced from *Fifty* to *Forty*, at which number it has ever since continued; this, Dr. Chamberlayne tells us, took place between the years 1672 and 1674. ||. There had been, indeed, a great Retrenchment early in the year 1668, which, though attended with changes in several parts of the Royal Establishment, did not affect either the BAND, or the OFFICERS; for they are comprehended in one general clause of exception, the intention of the Reform being, as it was declared, only to

\*. Heath's account of the Triumphs at the Restoration. London, 1662, 12mo.

†. Heath. This manner of their being armed is rather singular; but it agrees with that of the year 1641, and comes on the authority of an eye-witness.

‡ Ogleby's Coronation of K. Ch. II.

|| Present State.

cut off all supernumerary Places, "other than what were in the  
"time of his late MAJESTY, of blessed Memory \*." On the  
other hand we learn from Dr. Chamberlayne, that the Pay of  
the *Officers* was considerably encreased, which was effected by  
the above Reduction in point of *number*, without enlarging the  
*General Expence* †. If the pay of the *Gentlemen* of the *Band* did  
not arise to 100 *l.* per annum, by *Wages* and *Board-wages* taken  
together, in the reign of K. James I. (as Dr. Chamberlayne  
imagines to have been the case) there is room to surmise that  
it might receive some augmentation on this occasion.

It is but justice to observe here the *Respectability* of the *BAND*,  
when it seems to have lost the tarnish, which we have been  
told it received at the Union of the two Crowns; for in a List  
of the *Band*, 1672 (exclusive of the *Officers*) I find one Baronet  
and nine Knights ‡.

In the short reign of K. James II. Sir, little is found con-  
cerning the *BAND* in general

except that if Dr. Chamberlayne's ac-  
count be the Truth (and there is no reason to controvert it) the  
salaries both of the *Officers* and the *Gentlemen*, arose to their  
present Standard under King James §. One circumstance, how-  
ever, in the above general Ordinances, in the article relating to  
the Bed-chamber is observable, as far as it regards the *BAND*,

\* Lord Chamberlain's Office-Books...

† A similar manœuvre had been made use of [A. D. 1688] in the Corps of the  
*Yeomen* of the *Guard*, when, by a diminution of the number of *Yeomen*, salaries  
were raised for the payment of some additional *Officers*. [Lord Chamberlain's Of-  
fice-Books.]

‡ Present State of the year 1687. This is confirmed by a List of all the King's  
forces, (including the *Pensioners* and the *Yeomen*) made and printed 1684.

§ Chamberlayne's Present State of that date.

tending to clear up a point of Etiquette, which has sometimes admitted of a doubt, viz.—Whether the CAPTAIN of the *Horse-Guards, in Waiting* (now best known by the name of the *Gold-bick*) or the CAPTAIN of the *Band of Pensioners* has precedence? The question has arisen from the following words in the Orders of K. K. Ch. I. II. (before given at large) viz. “*The BAND of our PENSIONERS having the Honour to be our nearest Guard, &c.*”

I have seen an extract from Orders of K. Ch. II. (1678) which say that “An Officer of Our *Horse-Guards* is always to attend “and follow *next our Person* when we walk abroad, or pass up “and down from one place to another, as well within doors as “without, *excepting* always Our Bed-chamber.” In conformity with this last declaration the Orders of K. James II. for the Government of the Bed-chamber of the year 1685 say, that “Whensoever we repair to our Chapel, or elsewhere, or give “audience to an Ambassador, or other public Minister, out of “the districts of our Bed-chamber, the CAPTAIN of Our *Horse-Guards in Waiting*, the CAPTAIN of Our *Pensioners* and the “CAPTAIN of Our *Footmen* of the Guard shall take his place, “and follow next and immediately unto Our Person\*.” This seems to confirm the before-cited Ordinance of K. Charles II. the CAPTAIN of the *Horse-Guards* being here first mentioned. Should any doubts arise hereafter, (for I do not presume to urge any thing definitive,) the noble competitors may from hence form some judgment as to the merit of their respective claims, with a *Salvo jure* to the reigning Monarch, who can decide at plea-

\* Museum. [Vide Ayscough's Catalogue. Article the last.] This transcript of the Orders for the government of the *Royal Bed-Chamber*, I had the Honour to present to the Museum, 1782. It is a very fair copy, and was bought by me out of the before-mentioned Collection of the late George Sear, Esq.

sure. As I give no opinion, it is hoped I have not arrogated too much in taking the opportunity of bringing these circumstances together.

The *Æra* of the Revolution, favourable to some, and ungenial to others, according to the parts they took in the preceding commotions, found in the *Band of Pensioners* several whose former political attachments now militated against their interests; and it is no wonder that in a body of *Forty* Gentlemen of some weight and consequence, at a moment so important both to civil and religious liberty, several should be discovered whose known inclinations were, secretly at least, adverse to the change.

On the accession of KING WILLIAM, *John Lord Lovelace*, a Nobleman who had not been less active against K. James than he was firm and zealous in the cause of the House of Nassau, was placed in the command of the BAND \*. His Lordship, very soon after he received his appointment, dislodged some of the *Gentlemen*, for which he gave a manly, loyal, and unequivocal reason, to this effect:—that several of those who had been the Guard to the late King JAMES were not proper to have the Care of the Person of King WILLIAM. As the Account of this Transaction, Sir, is no where to be found but in the Books of the Council-Office, (from whence, with permission, I extracted it,) I shall trouble you with the particulars at large.

\* On the landing of the Prince of Orange, (1688) at Torbay, *Lord Lovelace* joined him with 70 Horse, which, in an engagement with the Militia of the county of Gloucester, were all taken prisoners. [Collins's Peerage, 1735.]

“ To the KING's most excellent MAJESTY and the *Right Hon.*  
 “ the Lords of his MAJESTY's *Most Honourable PRIVY*  
 “ COUNCIL.

“ The *humble Petition* of several of your MAJESTY's *Band*  
 “ of *Gentlemen Pensioners* and of *William Thomas, Esq;*  
 “ *Clerk of the Cheque* and *Paymaster* to the said *Band*.

“ Sheweth,

“ That the said *Band* of *Gentlemen Pensioners* was esta-  
 “ blished in the Reign of your MAJESTY's Royal ancestor, KING  
 “ HENRY the Seventh \*, as the First Guard to his Royal Person,  
 “ and his successors, and have ever since accordingly been con-  
 “ tinued from succession to succession; and the measure of the  
 “ CAPTAIN's power over them is by certain Articles, limited,  
 “ and liberty allowed, as well to the *Clerk of the Cheque* as to  
 “ every one of the said *Band*, of disposing of their respective  
 “ Places, (reserving the approbation of such *Gentlemen* to whom  
 “ such disposition should be made, to their MAJESTIES and their  
 “ successors,) and never have been amoveable at the will of their  
 “ CAPTAIN, and the same liberty hath been allowed to the  
 “ *Paymaster*, who is a Patent Officer.

“ And your MAJESTY's *Petitioners* are not conscious to them-  
 “ selves of any Neglect relating to the Duty of their said Places  
 “ and Offices, nor hath there ever been any objection made to  
 “ the due executing thereof; and your *Petitioners* can truly say  
 “ they have neither acted nor spoke, in compliance to the late  
 “ times, any thing which might weaken the Protestant interest,  
 “ or injure our Laws; but, on the contrary, constantly ex-  
 “ pressed their dissatisfaction to the measures then taken to the  
 “ prejudice of both.

\* Erroneous. Vid. *supra*.

“ And your *Petitioners* shall ever pray for your MAJESTY's  
“ long life and happy Reign.

( Signed )

“ Geo. Lluelline.

“Read May 9, 1689.”

In consequence of this Petition, an Order was made that LORD LOVEFACE should give in an answer to the Council-Board. This may be collected from a Case which will appear presently; for the Order itself is not entered in the Register Books of the Council-Office. Upon his *Lordship's* non-compliance, the discarded *Pensioners* presented a *Second* Petition (on the 30th of May) to the same effect as the former, which produced the following Order.

[illegible]

" *Order of Council upon the Second Petition of the GENTLEMEN*  
 " *PENSIONERS.*

" *At the Court at Hampton-Court, June 27, 1689.*

" *P R E S E N T,*

" *The KING's Most excellent MAJESTY.*

" *WHEREAS the Right Honourable LORD LOVELACE, CAP-*  
 " *TAIN of his MAJESTY's Band of Gentlemen Pensioners, was, by*  
 " *Order of the Board of the 9th of May last, desired to return*  
 " *his answer to a Petition of several Gentlemen Pensioners, and*  
 " *of William Thomas, Esq; Clerk of the Cheque, and Paymaster*  
 " *to the said Band, who had lately been removed from their*  
 " *Places, which his Lordship not having hitherto done; it was*  
 " *upon another Petition of the said Pensioners and Paymaster*  
 " *this day ordered by his MAJESTY in Council, that the said*  
 " *LORD LOVELACE be desired to hasten his said answer, to the*  
 " *end his MAJESTY may take such resolution thereupon as in*  
 " *his great wisdom shall be thought fit."*

LORD LOVELACE still withholding his answer, the *Gentlemen*  
 preferred a *third* Petition to the King and Council, with a *Cafe*  
 annexed, as follows :

" *To the KING's most excellent MAJESTY, and the Right Ho-*  
 " *nourable the Lords of his MAJESTY's most Honourable Privy*  
 " *Council.*

" *The humble Petition of several of your MAJESTY's Band*  
 " *of Gentlemen Pensioners, and of William Thomas,*  
 " *Esq; Clerk of the Cheque, and Paymaster of the said*  
 " *Band.*

" *Sheweth,*

" *That on reading of their Petition delivered to your MA-*  
 " *JESTY in Council the 8th day of April last, it was ordered*  
 " *that the LORD LOVELACE should forthwith give in his answer*  
 " *to the said Petition. That on reading your Petitioners second*  
 " *Petition,*

" Petition, which was presented to your MAJESTY in Council  
 " the 30th day of May last, setting forth the LORD LOVELACE's  
 " delay, your MAJESTY was pleased to order in Council the  
 " said LORD LOVELACE should hasten his answer; but his Lord-  
 " ship hath not yet thought fit to obey either of the said Or-  
 " ders, he being (as we humbly conceive) not able to give in an  
 " answer to the same; but by trouble, delay, and charge, to weary  
 " out your MAJESTY's Petitioners:  
 " Therefore humbly pray your sacred MAJESTY's and this  
 " Honourable Board's consideration on this severe usage; and since  
 " the LORD LOVELACE hath so delayed your Petitioners, and  
 " neglects to obey your MAJESTY's Orders, his Lordship may  
 " be ordered to give in his answer by a prefixed day; otherwise  
 " that they may be ordered to continue in their said Places and  
 " Offices, they being all known Protestants, and heartily af-  
 " fected to your MAJESTY's service.

" And your Petitioners shall ever pray, &c.

\* Received July 11, 1689.

\* Read in Council July 13, 1689.

" The GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, their Case on the Third Pe-  
 " tition.

" That the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS was esta-  
 " blished by KING HENRY the Seventh\*, and have ever since  
 " continued. The Rules for their Duty and the CAPTAIN's  
 " Power are set forth in several Articles. KING CHARLES the  
 " Second made Establishments, where they have liberty to dis-  
 " pose of their Places, his MAJESTY reserving the approbation of  
 " such persons (to be brought in) to himself: That no person thus  
 " admitted hath been ever removed at the Will of the CAPTAIN,

\* Erroneous, as before.

"and till now never any CAPTAIN pretended to any such power."

"Notwithstanding all this, the LORD LOVELACE, the present CAPTAIN, hath turned out more than Half the Band, without any regard to their ancient Establishment, or Quality of the Gentlemen whom he commands."

"His Lordship, after several of the Band were sworn to his present MAJESTY, caused them to cloath themselves for the CORONATION, and obliged them to buy at his Drapers and Laceman's;—pay ready monies;—and all this at a dear rate, yet hath turned out the same."

"The GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, for these grievances have, by several Petitions to his MAJESTY in Council, complained of their severe usage; and on reading the first Petition, it was ordered that the LORD LOVELACE should forthwith give in his answer, which was on the 9th day of May last. His Lordship neglecting to comply with the said Order, on their second Petition he was ordered to hasten the said answer; but to this day he hath not thought fit to obey either of the said Orders. His Lordship being lately desired to put in his Answer, he says *he will do it at his own leisure*. Thus, by delays, trouble, and charge, his Lordship designs to weary us out, in contempt of the said Orders."

"We now pray, in our Third Petition, a day may be prefixed for his putting in his Answer, in order to a Hearing, or that his MAJESTY would continue us in our said Places and Offices."

This Third Petition produced his LORDSHIP'S Answer, and a definitive Order of Council upon it in the following terms.

\* The Establishments here alluded to have not appeared to me in the course of this investigation. The Orders of King Charles II. of the year 1677, which lie before me, as well as those of King Charles I. (given p. 69) expressly direct that the PENSIONERS "*be freely chosen by OUR KNOWLEDGE*."

"The

*The Answer of JOHN LORD LOVELACE to the Petition of several  
of the late BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, presented to  
His MAJESTY in Council.*

That your MAJESTY having made this Respondent CAP-  
TAIN of your MAJESTY'S BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSION-  
ERS, and your MAJESTY having established all the other  
Officers: this Respondent did make choice of, and did ad-  
mit and swear, according to the Trust reposed by your  
MAJESTY in him, fit persons into the said BAND, being  
GENTLEMEN of Quality and entire Fidelity to your Majesty's  
service, and for whom this Respondent can be answerable to  
your MAJESTY.

As to the *Petitioners* Complaints that they were in posses-  
sion of their Employments under the late King James, im-  
mediately before your MAJESTY'S Accession to the Crown, and  
that they did purchase their Places, and are not amoveable  
at the Will of their CAPTAIN—This Respondent doth humbly  
answer, that the *Petitioners* have not been amoved; for not  
one of them have been chosen or placed in by this Respon-  
dent: but the *Petitioners* holding their Employments under  
the late KING as his Guard, and only during the pleasure of  
the said KING, the same are absolutely determined;—and their  
having been the Guard to the late KING JAMES does not seem  
to recommend them, that they should therefore be the Guard  
to your MAJESTY.

And as it has been the method peculiar to your MAJESTY'S  
Armies, that *Military* Offices have not been bought, but some  
have been conferred for Merit only—this Respondent dares  
not think that the Guard and Defence of your MAJESTY'S  
Person (which is the greatest Trust that can be in this World)  
should be bought and sold for Money."

“ However

**The KING's Honourable Band**

“ However, this Respondent doth humbly submit himself  
“ herein and in all things to your MAJESTY's Will and Plea-  
“ sure, he having hitherto and intending always to serve your  
“ MAJESTY, with an honest Heart and with clean Hands.  
“ This Respondent therefore humbly prays that the *Petition*  
“ may be dismissed this BOARD.

‘LOVELACE:

“ Read in Council, July 25, 1689.”

“ *At the Court at Whitehall, the 25th of July, 1689.*

“ P R E S E N T,

“ The KING's most Excellent MAJESTY.

“ WHEREAS, on the *Petition* of several of their MAJESTIES BAND  
“ of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, and of William Thomas, *Esq;*  
“ *Clerk of the Cheque*, and *Paymaster* to the said BAND, setting  
“ forth that the *Right Honourable* LORD LOVELACE, the present  
“ CAPTAIN of the said BAND, hath displaced and turned out the  
“ said *Pensioners* of the said BAND; and humbly praying that they  
“ may be continued in their said Places and Offices, not having  
“ hitherto misbehaved themselves, and being most heartily  
“ disposed to his MAJESTY's service—it was, on the 8th of May  
“ last, ordered in Council, that the LORD LOVELACE should  
“ have a Copy of the said *Petition*, and return his answer there-  
“ unto to this Board. And whereas on the 18th instant his MA-  
“ JESTY in Council was pleased to appoint a Hearing of the *Pe-*  
“ *titioners* this day at the Board, touching what they had to al-  
“ ledge, who being called in and heard, and the Answer of the  
“ LORD LOVELACE being also read, his MAJESTY in Council,  
“ upon the whole matter, thought fit to declare, that such per-  
“ sons as have been put into the BAND of GENTLEMEN PEN-  
“ SIONERS by the said LORD LOVELACE, shall remain and con-  
“ tinue in their places:—but that for the future no person shall

“ be

of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS.

87

“ be admitted into the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS  
“ who shall not be first presented to his MAJESTY for his MA-  
“ JESTY's Allowance and Approbation.”

After what passed at the *Revolution*, Sir, nothing further is to be traced in the Reign of *King William*. It does not appear that the complainants against *Lord Lovelace* were restored by the *King*, neither do they seem to have urged their Case again to his *Majesty*. *Q. ANNE*, however, was afterwards pleased to shew some tenderness to two of the discarded parties, viz. to *William Thomas*, Clerk of the *Cheque*, and *Samuel Aston*, one of the *Gentlemen* of the *Band*. They severally preferred Petitions to the *QUEEN* and *Council* (now remaining in the *Register-Books*) praying relief, and obtained a mandatory recommendation to the *Duke of St. Albans* (then *CAPTAIN*) to replace both of them on the first vacancies. I have thrown the proceedings hereupon in *Council* into a note \*.

It

\* “ At the Court at St. James's, the 21<sup>st</sup> day of May, 1703.

“ P R E S E N T

“ The *QUEEN*'s most excellent *MAJESTY*.

“ Upon reading this day at the Board a Report from the *DUKE OF ST. ALBANS* on the Petition of *William Thomas*, setting forth, that in May 1673, he was sworn and admitted into the place of *Clerk of the Cheque* to the *Band of Gentlemen Pensioners*, to hold the same for his Life, by Virtue of a Warrant from *King Charles II.* for which Employment as he alleges he gave *Seven Hundred Pounds*, and continued therein till he was displaced by the late *Lord Lovelace*, *CAPTAIN* of the *BAND*, without Reason given for his Removal: and upon hearing the said *William Thomas* thereunto, her *MAJESTY* in *Council* taking the Petitioner's Case into consideration, is pleased to order that the Petitioner be, and he is hereby, recommended to his Grace the *DUKE OF ST. ALBANS*, preferably to any other person to be put into the said Office of the said *Band of Pensioners* upon the first Vacancy that shall happen.”

The Order in *Mr. Aston*'s Case runs in similar terms, as follows.

“ At

It has appeared on the face of these Orders of Council, that Mr. *Thomas* purchased the Office of *Clerk of the Cheque*, as did Mr. *Alston* that of *Gentleman Pensioner* in the reign of K. *Charles II.* which consideration might lead to the QUEEN's clemency; though, at the same time, the transaction taken in the gross seems to have given great offence to her MAJESTY, who, on her Accession, had issued the following strong Declaration from the Council-board, that no Office in the Household should thereafter be purchased, on pain not only of the Royal Displeasure, but of actual dismissal \*.

“ At the Court at St. James's, the 17th day of May, 1703.

“ P R E S E N T,

“ The QUEEN's most excellent MAJESTY,

“ Upon reading this day at the Board the Petition of *Samuel Alston*, setting forth that he was turned out of the Band of *Gentlemen Pensioners* (which employment cost him *Five Hundred Pounds*) by the late Lord *Lovelace*, without any Cause alledged, as his Grace the DUKE OF ST. ALBANS certified in a Report, and humbly praying that an Order of Council of the 23d of May, 1695, whereby the Petitioner was recommended by their Excellencies the then Lords Justices to his Grace the Duke of St. Albans, to be admitted into and placed upon the Establishment of the Band, upon the first vacancy that should happen therein, may be confirmed according to its Date and Precedency:—  
“ It is ordered by her MAJESTY in Council that the said *Samuel Alston* accordingly be, and he is hereby, recommended to his Grace the DUKE OF ST. ALBANS, CAPTAIN of the Band of *Gentlemen Pensioners*, to be admitted into and placed upon the Establishment of the said Band, upon the first vacancy that shall happen therein, according to the intention of the said Order.”

\* There is the more reason to suppose that ~~that~~ the Queen considered Mr. *Thomas's* Case with respect to the Post of *Clerk of the Cheque*, as compassionate, in regard it was purchased; because no notice is taken of the *Paymaster'ship* in the preceding Order, nor does Mr. *Thomas* any where represent that Office in the same light.

“ At the Court at St. James's, the 2d day of July, 1702.

P R E S E N T.

“ The QUEEN's most excellent MAJESTY.

“ Her MAJESTY is pleased to acquaint the Lords of the  
“ Council, That having settled her Family and Household, her  
“ MAJESTY had resolved to hinder the *selling* of Places for the  
“ future, and to declare her Pleasure, That no *Officer* or *Person*  
“ depending on her MAJESTY, do presume to *sell* any *Office* or  
“ *Place*. And to the end that this her MAJESTY's *Royal Pleasure*  
“ be made public in the best manner, her MAJESTY, with the  
“ advice of her Privy Council, has thought fit to order that Mr.  
“ Attorney General and Mr. Solicitor General do prepare the  
“ draught of a Declaration to be published in her MAJESTY's  
“ Name accordingly, and do present the same to her MAJESTY  
“ at this Board, for her *Royal Approbation*.”

In consequence of these Instructions to her MAJESTY's Attorney General and Solicitor General, the following Declaration was issued:

“ At the Court at St. James's the 9th day of July, 1702.

“ P R E S E N T.

“ The QUEEN's most excellent MAJESTY.

“ Her MAJESTY is pleased to declare that she judges the *selling*  
“ *of Offices and Places* in her Household and Family to be  
“ highly dishonourable to her MAJESTY, prejudicial to her  
“ Service, and a discouragement to Virtue and true Merit, which  
“ can and shall only recommend persons to her *Royal Appro-*  
“ *bation*; and that her MAJESTY is resolved to prevent such  
“ *selling* of the same: and therefore declares her Pleasure to be  
“ that no *Officer* or *Servant* whatsoever that is or shall be of  
“ *HER* Family or Household, do presume to *sell* or *buy*, or suf-  
“ *fer* to be *sold* or *bought*, any *Office* or *Place* therein under  
M “ pain

“ pain of incurring her MAJESTY's displeasure, and of being  
 “ removed from her service; and that all persons concerned may  
 “ take notice hereof, her MAJESTY commands that this Decla-  
 “ ration be forthwith printed and published.”

It was accordingly made public by the Gazette of the 13th of July.

Herein we have again followed the *French* practice, for the same abuse had crept repeatedly into the *Gardes du Corps*, and Ordinances were as often made to reform it\*. At what point of time these and other similar Offices in our Court relapsed into a state of Venality I do not learn; but it was probably a gradual encroachment, which, from indulgence, grew into an inherent right, the purchaser claiming in his turn to become a Vendor; and it is matter of public notoriety, that, by connivance, such Posts continue to be transferable property at this day. These transactions, however, had certainly met with an abolition by the authority of Parliament in the present Reign, had not the universality of the practice and the hardship attending the measure protected the parties, the particulars of which affair I shall mention briefly in the order of time. It is obvious, however, to remark, that the loss of dignity must of course follow, when Offices once so honourable, became indiscriminately open to every purchaser; and, from what we have seen on the whole, we may observe, with Pere Daniel—“ *la SPLENDEUR d'un des plus illustres Corps qui ait été dans la Maison de nos Rois, et sa*  
 “ DECADENCE entiere †.”

Nothing further being discernible in this, or indeed in the following Reign, we may pass on to that of K. GEORGE II. the interval being merely filled with Orders for general and particular Attendances, Dispensations for Absence, &c. The letter

\* P. Daniel, Hist. de la Milice Française, Tom. II. p. 139.

† Idem. p. 111.

of the Duke of Montagu, mentioned before, (p. 69.) belongs to this period, in the year 1734, which, while it gives a very polite reprehension for previous neglect, and exacts a rigorous attention to duty, admits at the same time of a latitude in some particulars which exists at present.

A Letter from his Grace *John Duke of Montagu*, CAPTAIN of the BAND of PENSIONERS, to the *Clerk of the Cheque* \*.

“ SIR,

“ As his MAJESTY has done me the honour to entrust  
“ me with the Command of his Honourable *Band of Gentlemen*  
“ *Pensioners*, so I think it an indispensable duty incumbent upon  
“ me to do every thing in that Trust which may be for the  
“ Honour of his MAJESTY and of the *Band*; and not to suffer  
“ any thing which may derogate from either. The *Band of Pen-*  
“ *sioners*, as they have the honour to be his MAJESTY's *nearest*  
“ *Guard*, so they are intitled to an honour which no other of  
“ his Guards have, which is that of mounting Guard daily in  
“ his MAJESTY's *Presence-Chamber*, and thereby becoming more  
“ nearly entrusted than any other in the immediate Guard of his  
“ MAJESTY's sacred Person.

“ This Honour was first granted to the Band by K. Henry  
“ VIII. by the Ordinances made by him for the Government  
“ of the Band, and was confirmed by K. Charles I. in the year  
“ 1633—by K. Charles II. in the year 1677—and by K. James  
“ II. 1684.

“ This material, and one of the most honourable parts of the  
“ Duty belonging to the *Gentlemen Pensioners*, they are not  
“ only under the penalty of the *Cheque*, but by the Oath taken.

\* Extracted from the Order-Book, by permission of the Captain of the Band.

“ at their Admission, obliged to perform ; by which Oath they  
 “ are bound to observe the Rules and Articles already made, or  
 “ which shall be hereafter made for the Government of the  
 “ *Band*, and in all things to be obedient to their Officers, so far  
 “ as their Commands shall concern the service of the *King's*  
 “ *MAJESTY*.

“ But notwithstanding their obligations, I have observed this  
 “ material part of their Duty of daily attendance in the *Presence-*  
 “ *Chamber* has been of late years neglected, which I can attri-  
 “ bute to no other cause in the *Gentlemen* than the want of  
 “ their being rightly informed of their Duty, which if they had  
 “ known, I am persuaded they would never have neglected that  
 “ Duty which they owe to his *MAJESTY* and obliged to by their  
 “ Oath, and which is a dishonour for them to omit.

“ And as I am persuaded it will be entirely pleasing to the  
 “ *Gentlemen* to have them maintained in every part of the Ho-  
 “ nourable Privileges belonging to them, which at the same  
 “ time is consistent with the Duty which myself and they owe  
 “ to his *MAJESTY* : it is my intention that from New-year's  
 “ Day next you do take due care, (as you are obliged by your  
 “ Office either by yourself or by your Deputy) that the *Gentle-*  
 “ *men* of the *Band* do attend every morning with their *Axes* in  
 “ the *Presence-Chamber*.

“ By the Articles of the *Band*, the whole *Band* are to at-  
 “ tend during *Christmas* time ; but I shall dispense with the at-  
 “ tendance of the whole for this time,—provided that all the  
 “ *Gentlemen*, who are now in town, do give their attendance  
 “ on the *first of January*, and that from that time forward *Five*  
 “ of the *Gentlemen* do attend every morning\*, in the *Presence-*  
 “ *Chamber*, with their *Axes*, from the hour of Ten till his *MA-*

\* At that time the King had a Levée every morning.

"JESTY is gone to Dinner, and that they also attend with their  
 " *Battle-Axes* in the *Presence-Chamber* every Drawing-room  
 " night, and other public nights \*, from Eight o'clock in the  
 " evening till his MAJESTY is retired, and always to stand to  
 " their Arms when any of the ROYAL FAMILY, or the CAP-  
 " TAIN pass by.

" This is what I desire you will forthwith acquaint the *Lieut-*  
 " *enant*, *Standard-bearer*, and *Gentlemen* of the *Band* with,  
 " and as it is a Duty so much for the Honour of the KING to  
 " have performed, and for the *Gentlemen* to perform, so I am  
 " persuaded it will be with the greatest pleasure the *Gentle-*  
 " *men* will receive this Order, and that consequently they will  
 " obey it with the greatest chearfulness.

" I am, Sir,

" Your Friend and Servant,

" MONTAGU.

" Ditton,

" Dec. 28, 1734-

" I would have you every week let me have a Return of the  
 " Names of the several *Gentlemen* that have mounted Guard on  
 " the several days of that week.

" To George Turner, Esq;

" Clerk of the Cheque to

" the *Band of Pensioners*."

The BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, Sir, having been so  
 long a mere appendage to the KING's State and the parade of the  
 Court, one does not expect to hear again of *Musters*, *Horses*, *Arms*,  
 &c. but the internal disquietude of the northern parts of the king-  
 dom had, in the year 1745, so nearly called the KING into the

\* Queen Caroline had her Drawing-Rooms in an Evening.

Field, that the BAND actually received an Order from *Sir William Wynne* the *LIEUTENANT*,<sup>\*</sup> in the absence of *Lord Hobart*, (the *CAPTAIN*) to prepare themselves to attend his *MAJESTY*, who had resolved to set up his Standard on Finchley Common. Every body knows that the decisive battle of Culloden, gained by his late Royal Highness William Duke of Cumberland, prevented the *KING* from taking the Field. The following are the words, of the Order sent by the *Clerk of the Cheque* to each *Gentleman* to accompany the Royal Standard.

“ S I R,

“ Dec. 5, 1745.

“ The Rebels having advanced to Derby, the *KING* has signified his intention to set up his Standard on Finchley Common. You are therefore commanded to acquaint the *Gentlemen* of the BAND to be in readiness with their *Servants, Horses,* and *Arms*, to attend his *MAJESTY* there.

“ I am, Sir,

“ Your Friend and humble Servant,

“ WILLIAM WYNNE\*.

“ To *George Turner, Esq; Clerk*

“ *of the Cheque*, to his *MA-*

“ *JESTY's Band of Gentlemen*

“ *Pensioners.*”

Thus far, Sir, I have brought forward every material occurrence that I have been able to collect respecting the BAND, in chronological order, nearly to the middle of the present Century; and yet a circumstance happened so lately as the year 1782, which must not be passed over in silence.

Chamberlayne tells us, that one old privilege of the *Gentlemen Pensioners* was that they should be admitted to *Commissions*

\* Order-Book of the Band.

in the Army preferably to all other persons whatsoever\*. I have not seen the Authority for such an Assertion, but it conforms very much with what is stated in Lord Hunsdon's letter to King James I. where the *Band* is considered as a school to qualify Gentlemen for higher and more active Employments. This remove from the *Band* into the *Army*-establishment, I am informed, was meditated a few years ago, when the Earl of Lichfield had the Command; but difficulties arose concerning Rank, and the matter dropped.

An intention of an inverse nature was entertained by Mr. Burke, in his Bill for the Reform of the Royal Household, which was brought into the House of Commons in the above year 1782, whereby it was proposed that no Post under the command of the CAPTAIN of the BAND should be sold, but be supplied thereafter by *Officers* of the Navy or Army *upon Half-pay* of a certain standing, (left to the determination of a parliamentary Committee) from the date of their first Commission. The *Officers* of the *Women of the Guard* (the CAPTAIN excepted) were placed in the same predicament. This Clause, if carried to effect, would have been fraught with private injury, inasmuch as the *Officers* of both these Bodies, as well as the *Gentlemen* of the *Band* then in Office, had all bought their Posts on the faith of their transferability, and would thereby have been tied down to a life-interest only, after having paid for their respective Purchases *from one to six thousand Guineas*. Mr. Burke, on the second introduction of his Bill with amendments, became sensible of the oppression involved in the first draught of it, and the Clause was

\* Present State of the Year 1737, by John Chamberlayne, Esq.—He adds, That none shall be admitted into the Band except they shall have served at their own Charge, for Six Months at least, as Gentlemen at Arms, or Pensioners Extraordinary. This circumstance, for want of confirmation, I leave doubtful.

omitted ; but not till the *Band of Pensioners*, on their part, had presented the following *Petition* to the *House of Commons*.

“ To the *Honorable* the *COMMONS* of *Great Britain* in Parliament assembled.

“ The Humble *Petition* of the *Gentlemen* belonging to the *Honorable Band of Pensioners*,

“ Sheweth,

“ THAT your *Petitioners* having perused the Bill before this *Honorable House*, ‘ For enabling his Majesty to discharge the Debt contracted upon the *Civil List Revenues*, and for preventing the same from being in arrear for the future, by regulating the mode of payment out of the said *Revenues*, and by suppressing or regulating certain *Offices* therein mentioned, which are now paid out of the *Revenues of the Civil List*,’ are under the greatest concern to find it proposed to be enacted by such Bill, ‘ That all *Commission and other Officers* belonging to the *Band of Gentlemen Pensioners*, under the *CAPTAIN of the Band*, as also the *Vacancies in the Band of Gentlemen Pensioners*, should not be sold, but that the *Officers and private Gentlemen of the Band of Pensioners* should be filled only by *Officers of the Army or Navy upon Half-Pay*.’

“ That your *Petitioners* beg leave to inform this *Honorable House*, that it has been customary for many years past to purchase the *Office or place of a private Gentleman of the Band of Pensioners*, and to sell the same (with the approbation of the *CAPTAIN*) as occasion offered:

“ That, in confidence of being permitted to sell such *Office or Place*, your *Petitioners* have been induced to give, on an average, *One Thousand Guineas* for the same:

“ That

“ That the Salary of such Office or Place, after payment of  
 “ the Land Tax and other out-goings, seldom producing more  
 “ than the net annual sum of *Seventy-nine* pounds, and the ex-  
 “ pence of the necessary regimental or uniform-dress of your  
 “ *Petitioners* being deducted thereout, reduces the Income to  
 “ about *Seventy-six* Pounds *per annum* :

“ That many of your *Petitioners* being Gentlemen of small  
 “ fortunes, and having little else to depend on than this income,  
 “ and some of your *Petitioners* being married and having chil-  
 “ dren, will be very much distressed if they should not be per-  
 “ mitted to sell their Offices or Places.

“ Your *Petitioners* therefore with the greatest *Deference* sub-  
 “ mit their Case to the Justice and Wisdom of this Ho-  
 “ norable House, trusting, that on due Consideration they  
 “ shall have such *Indemnities* and *Relief* in the Premises,  
 “ as to this Honorable House shall seem meet.”

“ And your *Petitioners* shall ever pray.”

From the fore-going *Petition*, Sir, the present state of the *BAND*  
 may in most points be collected : but notwithstanding I have tres-  
 passed so much on your patience, there are some particulars yet  
 remaining, with which I must beg leave to detain you for a few  
 minutes longer.

In the List of the *Officers* and *Gentlemen* before given in the  
 Reign of KING HENRY, and in all others which I have seen, the  
*Harbinger* is mentioned, of whom we have as yet taken no no-  
 tice, and who, we learn from Lord *Hunsdon's* Letter, had the  
 Rank of a *Gentleman-Harbinger*. Our Kings, till the late Reform  
 (1782) had three Orders of *Harbingers*, viz. A *Knight-Harbin-*  
*ger*;—one or more *Gentlemen-Harbingers*;—and five or more  
*Yeomen-Harbingers*. It is not necessary to go into the functions

of these Officers on this occasion; suffice it to say, that in the distribution of lodgings formerly, when the Court moved in progresses, &c. the *Knight-Harbinger* provided for the accommodation of the KING and ROYAL FAMILY; —the *Gentlemen-Harbingers* for the *Great Officers*,—and the *Yeomen-Harbingers* for the rest of the Retinue\*: it was therefore no small honour that the BAND of PENSIONERS should be allowed a peculiar Officer of this denomination, and a still greater, that he should be of the *second Order*. There is at this time another Appendage of a late date, viz. a *Messenger* and *Axe-keeper*, (consolidated Offices) not properly a branch of the Establishment, as the party is paid by the BAND: this latter appurtenance however seems rather to have been a revival, by general consent; for we have seen that formerly each *Gentleman*, on Musters, and such other occasions, was allowed to have his *Axe* borne after him, by a servant, to the places of Rendezvous†.

• THE GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS are now styled *Esquires* in their Warrants of Appointment, which puts them upon a par with CAPTAINS in the Army, though they have no military Rank; and yet it is observable, that in the Proclamation whereby Mr. Percy is declared a Traitor, in the Reign of K. James I. he is described by the name and addition of Thomas Percy, *Gentleman*. There were several Proclamations relating to him, in not one of which he is styled *Esquire*.

At what time the *Uniform* was first adopted similar to its present mode (according to the fashion of the day), I cannot determine, though it may most probably be attributed to the pe-

\* The Offices of *Gentleman-Harbinger* and *Yeomen-Harbingers*, were abolished 1782: and that of *Knight-Harbinger* now only remains.

† I find no trace of these subordinate Officers in the Present States, either of Chamberlayne, or Minge, till the beginning of the Reign of King George II. The *Messenger's* is the ostensible Office, and [redacted] the Post of *Axe-keeper* is understood to pass with it, though not expressed in the *Messenger's* Warrant.

mod of the Restoration, from which time it has acquired on every change, a still more military Cast. There seems generally to have been a conformity of dress, at least in the Outward Garment of the *Band*: thus at the siege of Boulogne, (1544) we have seen the *Pensioners* habited alike, and again at the Coronation of K. Edw. VI. though indeed at one of the Musters in that King's Reign they appear variously dressed and ornamented. We however find their Habit restored to uniformity in the Reigns of Q. Mary and Q. Elizabeth, after which we have no view of it till we come very near our own times\*. The present *Uniform* is so well known as to require no description, and may possibly alter in some points on the next Renewal, being entirely at the pleasure of the *Captain*, with the *King's* approbation:—but I seem to have said enough already on the subject to draw upon myself the Censure which Bishop Nicolson has passed upon Hall the Chronicler †.

With respect to other *Ensigns of Office*, the CAPTAIN bears an *Ebony* Staff with a *Gold Head*, in the form of a Cane, which he receives from the KING, without any other Commission, and which he surrenders likewise to the KING on the Resignation of his Post. At what precise time this Badge was first adopted, we can only conjecture: thus much however seems to carry it to the Restoration, as in a Plate of a Procession of the Knights of

\* The following circumstances may serve to shew something of the official Habit in the earlier parts of the present Century. In the Order for New Cloaths on the Birth-day of King George I. (May 28, 1726,) it is specified that the Gentlemen should wear *Scarlet Stockings*. In the next Reign, (A. D. 1751) they were exchanged for *Light Grey Stockings*, and the Order further prescribed *Brigadier-Perukes* and *Buckskin-Gloves*. [Order-Book].

† “If the Reader,” says his Lordship, “desires to know what sort of Cloaths were worn in each King's Reign, and how the Fashions altered, this is an Historian for his purpose.” [English Historical Library, p. 71. 2d edit.]

the Garter, 1671, in Ashmole's History of the Order, the CAPTAIN is placed at the head of the BAND with a similar *Baton*\*.

The CAPTAIN is sworn into his Post by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN *in person*, by virtue of the KING's Warrant.

The LIEUTENANT and STANDARD-BEARER have similar Staves of *Ebony*, with Heads of *Silver*, which they likewise receive from the KING, as Investitures in Office, after which they are sworn by the *Clerk of the Cheque*, in consequence of a Warrant from the CAPTAIN. The CLERK OF THE CHEQUE wears an Officer's Uniform, and has likewise an *Ebony* Staff, inferiorly ornamented on the Head, (being partly *Silver* and partly *Ivory*) which was first allowed by the Duke of Montagu when Captain, 1737, as appears from the Order-Book now before me, where the following Memorandum is found ;

Dec. 7th, 1737.

"His Grace the DUKE OF MONTAGU was pleased to give a Staff to George Turner, Esq; Clerk of the Cheque, and directed him to carry the same whenever he attended on his MAJESTY in the Presence-Chamber †."

This Officer is sworn by the CAPTAIN ;—and receives the Staff from him, and not from the KING.

The GENTLEMEN of the BAND are sworn by the Clerk of the Cheque, by the CAPTAIN's Warrant.

It need not be said that the principal *Insignia* of Office belonging to the GENTLEMEN are their *Axes*. The Heads of them resemble the ancient *Axes* used in close onset with the enemy ; the offensive part is smaller, for ease and convenience ; though the Shaft is longer, for State : so that the proper term for them is *Pole-Axes*, they being elongated *Battle-Axes*. This weapon was formerly a part of the Royal Equipment in War, and in

\* Chap. XXI. Sect. 4.

† Order-Book. This Indulgence carries the more honour with it, as the Clerk of the Cheque of the Yeomen of the Guard has no such official Badge.

engravings from old Portraits we often see martial Kings drawn with the *Battle-Axe* in their hands; and at funerals, both of our **KINGS**, and even of **QUEENS REGENT**, the *Axe* was carried with great pomp, and offered together with the rest of the armorial Regalia at the Altar. Thus at the interment of *K. Henry VII.* Sir David Owen carried the King's Helmet, which was crowned; after whom "rode Sir Edward Howard, the second son of the Earl of Surrey, Treasurer of England, armed compleat with the King's Harness, his face discovered, bearing in his hand the King's *Battle-Axe*, the head downwards, resting on his foot \*." Again, at the funeral of *Q. Mary*, after the persons who bore the *Helmet* and *Crest*, "the Man of Arms, the Lord Sheffield, came riding, armed at all pieces saving the head, with a *Pole-Axe* in his hand, and lighted at the Choir door, and being led from thence to the High Altar by two noblemen, offered the said *Pole-Axe*, and after went to the Vestry, and was there unarmed †."

The *Axes* of the *Pensioners* are represented very differently from any other appearance of them that we have opportunity of observing, in Vandyck's sketch of the Procession of the Knights of the Garter, 1639, proposed as part of a delineated history of the Order, to have been represented (in conformity with the Ceiling) on the Walls of the Banqueting-house at Whitehall ‡. The *Axes* there have rather the form of *Adzes*, without any pike or horizontal spikes, as at present, with the Shaft quite plain and unornamented, whereas, even in the reign of Queen Elizabeth, in the *Hunsdon* painting, they come much nearer those in use at this time. In the next reign (of Charles II.) the *Axes* seem entirely to have assumed their present shape and em-

\* Leland's Collectanea. Vol. IV. p. 303 in the Addenda.

† Idem. Vol. V. p. 321.

‡ The original in the possession of the Earl of Northington, an engraving of which was published in 1783, in Aqua tinta; by Richard Cooper. See more of this design in Mr. Walpole's Anecdotes of Painting in England. Art. Vandyck.

bellishments, as we may discern from the representation of a procession of the Knights of the Garter given by Ashmole\*. The above drawing of Vandyck being in *Chiaro scuro*, the Colour of the Habit of the *Pensioners* is not discernible; neither does the *Captain's* official Baton (if then in use) appear from the Procession in the year 1639; for *Theophilus* EARL of SUFFOLK (then the CAPTAIN) being a Knight-companion of the Order, walked in his place, and is not distinguished from the other Knights by any Ensign of Office.

On a Demise of the Crown, or on the Death of a Queen-Consort, the BAND of PENSIONERS attend the Funeral, and flank the Canopy, carrying their *Axes* reversed, and on several of these occasions the *Axes* have been put *in Mourning*, that is, their Tufts were black, and their Shafts were covered with black velvet, studded with black nails, instead of the usual covering of crimson velvet, ornamented with gilt nails, &c †.

\* Hist. of the Order of the Garter, Chap. XXI. Sect. 4.

† This was done on the demise of *Q. Anne*—of *K. George I.* and of *Q. Caroline*. Till the Accession of his present Majesty, Orders for the Mourning issued from the CAPTAIN *in writing*, addressed to the *Clerk of the Cheque*, who notified them to the *Band*, and were not included in any public Order from the *Earl Marshal*—the *Lord Chamberlain*, or the *Secretary at War*. On the demise of the late King, to give the Court a more military appearance, it was only required that the *Band* and the *Officers*, (together with the *Officers* of the *Yemen* of the *Guard*,) in common with naval and military *Officers*, should wear a Crape round the left arm: by which means the *Band* became included in the Order for Mourning which issued from the *War-Office*.

Having gone thus far into minutiae, it may not be amiss to preserve the last Order of this kind, which issued interiorly from the *Captain*.

On the demise of the Crown [1727] the *Band* was directed to wear---“Scarlet  
“Coats trimmed with black, black cloth Waistcoats and Breeches, black Swords  
“and Buckles, and to put their *Axes* in Mourning.”

On *Q. Caroline's* death [1737] the Mourning was still closer, viz.--“Scarlet  
“cloth Coats, without buttons on the sleeves, or pockets, with Waistcoats and  
“Breeches of black cloth, Weepers broad hemmed, chamoy Gloves, crape Hat-  
“bands, black Swords and Buckles, and their *Axes* to be covered with black vel-  
“vet.” [Order-Book.]

Some-

Something might be expected in this account concerning the **BATTLE-AXE-GUARDS** in Ireland; but they, being a body of *Yeomen of the Guard* (like those in England) will be mentioned in a future Memoir.

As to the Duty of the **GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS** at present, it may be termed very inconsiderable, having diminished in proportion as State has relaxed, and indeed it has always been governed by the temper of the times; so that the *Band* has long been an inactive Body, merely appertaining to the **KING's** domestic Dignity, though liable to be called into Field-attendance, in conformity with what we have seen was intended in the last Reign.

*Five* of those *Gentlemen* who are on the quarterly Rota now appear every *Levé Day* and every *Drawing-room Day*, in the *Presence-Chamber*, and stand to their Arms when any of the *Royal Family* pass through\*.

On *Sundays*, and whenever the **KING** goes to the Chapel, the whole *Quarterly Guard* of *Twenty* keep the Pass in the *Presence-Chamber* in going, and in the *Gallery* on the return, bringing up the rear of the Procession. In the Room where the **KING** receives an Address on the Throne, they are ranked in like manner, as they also are in the interior Approach to the *House of Peers* when the **KING** goes thither, excepting the *Five Gentlemen* stationed at *St. James's*. On all such occasions they are covered *en militaire*.

This attendance at the entrance of the *House of Peers* is a remnant of their ancient Duty, which was formerly carried much further: for in the reign of King James I. when the **KING** and the **PEERS** went in procession to *Parliament* on horseback in their Robes, the *Gentlemen Pensioners* (I presume the whole Band) escorted the **KING** on each side of the Cavalcade on foot†.

\* See the Duke of Montagu's Letter, *antea*, p. 91. wherein this indulgence as to number is given.

† Extracts from the Journal of Sir Simonds D'Ewes, in *Bibl. Topog. Brit.*, N. XV. pp. 19. 20. The original is in *Bibl. Harl. N. 1646*.

The Duty of the *Five Gentlemen* attending in the *Presence-Chamber* likewise went further in the late Reign than it now does; for an Order made by the *Duke of Montagu* (the CAPTAIN) in the year 1737, directs, that when the KING goes to the *Parliament-House*, “the *Five Gentlemen*, waiting in the “*Presence-Chamber*, do always attend his MAJESTY down stairs “with their *Axes*, to his Coach, and wait till it is gone off; “and on his return from the *House* to *St. James's*, they are to “receive him at his alighting out of his Coach, and guard his “MAJESTY up-stairs to the *Presence-Chamber*, where they “usually wait.” This Order moreover enjoins, that “*Four* “of the *Gentlemen in waiting* on his MAJESTY at the *Parliament-House*, do receive him at his getting out of his Coach, “and follow into the *Prince's Chamber*, where his MAJESTY “robes, and place themselves as near the KING as conveniently “may be, before the *Yeomen of the Guard*, and stand to their “Arms till his MAJESTY is gone into the *House*; and that “they place themselves in a like manner against his MAJESTY “comes out of the *House*, and whilst his MAJESTY un-robes, “and attend him down stairs to his Coach \*.”

And now, Sir, I have but one more official Circumstance to trouble you with on the part of the BAND, not the least ancient, nor the least honourable, Branch of their Duty, which is that the *Gentlemen Pensioners* have a prescriptive Right to carry up the Royal Dinner on Coronations, without exhibiting any Claims, as others do, who often contend for the performance of similar Offices on such occasions, in quality of *Carver*, *Cup-bearer*, *Sawer*, &c. &c. &c. These last being feudal services, appendant to Lands and Offices held of the Crown, to be performed solely on Coronations, occur but seldom, while the BAND of PENSIONERS had the further honour of carrying up the second Course at St.

George's Feast. This, which formerly was an annual Solemnity of the first magnitude (exclusive of Festivals purely religious) is now not observed, except as a Collar-day, when the 23d of April (St. George's Day) falls on a Sunday; unless we may be allowed, by transposition to call *that* day St. George's Feast, when there is an Installation of Knights of the Garter at Windsor, on which occasion likewise, if the KING be present, the GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS now perform the Office of carrying up the second Course \*.

In reward for such service on Coronations, the Sovereign has of late years usually conferred the Honour of Knighthood on some of the *Officers or Gentlemen of the Band*, ordering the customary Fees to be paid at the Treasury; and on Installations the King often confers the same Honour, but does not carry the compliment so far as to discharge the Fees †." This

\* The Ceremonial of serving the second Course of the Royal Dinner on Installations of Knights of the Garter is thus exhibited by Ashmole, as performed 1663, though he confesses that the drawing is defective for want of room in the Plate ‖:— Enough however is preserved for our purpose, viz.

" Two Serjeants at Arms,

" Two Serjeants at Arms,

" Comptroller of the Household,

" Treasurer of the Household.

" The Sewer.

" GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS carrying the Dishes,

" Two and Two.

" Master of the Household,

" Cofferer of the Household,

" A Clerk of the Green Cloth,

" A Clerk of the Green Cloth,

" A Clerk Comptroller of the Green

" A Clerk Comptroller of the Green

" Cloth,

" Cloth.

" Second Clerk of the Kitchen,

" Chief Clerk of the Kitchen.

† On the Coronation of his present MAJESTY the *Standard-bearer* and the *Senior Gentleman* of the BAND were knighted, and the usual Fees paid at the Treasury. On the other hand, when the King assumed his Stall at Windsor, as Sovereign of the Order, 1762, the *Lieutenant* of the BAND received the honour of Knight-

‖ Order of the Garter, pp. 588. et. seq.

This honourable Service of carrying up a part at least of the Royal Dinner, has long been an appendage of Office to the BAND on other solemn and splendid occasions, as well as at Coronations and at St. George's Feast. Thus on the Marriage of King Philip and Queen Mary, the *Gentlemen Pensioners* we are told chiefly carried up the Dinner, at which Ceremony their CAPTAIN (*Thomas Ratcliffe, Earl of Suffex*) officiated as *Sewer*\*. On other less public Solemnities, and even in Progresses, when the Sovereign either gave or accepted an entertainment in State, the BAND performed the same Office: as for example, when Q. Elizabeth, in a Progress, visited Arch-bishop Parker, at Canterbury, 1573, the Dinner was served by her MAJESTY'S PENSIONERS,—“*Reginæ a Stipatoribus, quos Pensionarios appellant, in mensâ ministratum est*†.”

To return, Sir, for a moment, to the Ceremony used at Installations of Knights of the Garter, Ashmole tells us that the BAND formerly went in guard on each side of the Sovereign and the Knights-Companions, as they did, for instance, in the eighth year of King Charles I. to and from St. George's Chapel†: but afterwards, in the next reign, when Ashmole wrote, the BAND closed the Procession, *Two* and *Two*, with the CAPTAIN at their head||. This change of Post had at that time taken place

hood; but the Fees were not allowed by the Treasury-Board, for want of a precedent, and the *Lieutenant* paid them himself—as did the *Clerk of the Cheque*, who was knighted at the Installation, 1771. King Charles I. soon after his Coronation in Scotland (1633) knighted no less than *seventeen* of his GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS. [Catalogue of Knights made by King Charles, collected by T. W. London, 1642, duod.]

\* Strype's Memorials. Vol. III. p. 136. The Office of the *Sewer* is to place the Dishes properly on the Table.

† The account of this Progress, written in Latin, is given in the Appendix to the second Volume of Strype's Annals of the Reformation.

‡ Hist. of the Order of the Garter, pp. 515. 566. 579.

|| Idem. See the Plate between p. 576 and p. 577.

in other Proceffions, as we have feen in the courfe of this Memoir, and therefore may be attributed to the Reftoration, a period which introduced many fimilar alterations about the Court.

While the *Sovereign's* Table on thefe occasions is thus ferved by his BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS, the *Yeomen of the Guard* (who daily carry up the King's Dinner in private) are configned to the performance of the like Office at the Table of the *Knights-Companions*:—and as I cannot leave the *Band* in the poffeffion of a more honourable Employment, I here, Sir, fet you at liberty, with many Apologies for the length of this Memoir, and remain, with great Refpect for You and the Society,

Your obliged,

and moft obedient,

humble fervant,

SAMUEL PEGGE.

Whitehall,  
June 4, 1784.

APPENDIX.

[illegible]

1. The first step is to identify the problem or question that needs to be answered. This involves understanding the context and the specific requirements of the task.

A P P E N D I X. N<sup>o</sup>. I.

IT is scarcely possible, Sir, at this distance of time, to preserve a regular succession of the several CAPTAINS of the BAND of PENSIONERS from its Institution, which comprehends a period of more than *Two Hundred and Seventy Years*: but such whose Names and Titles have occurred in the course of the preceding Research, are here given from the authorities which have offered themselves. By the following List it will appear that the BAND has always been thought a Post of high and distinguished honour, not unworthy the acceptance of the first Nobility, and which, in one case only, (that of Sir Anthony Browne, who was a *Knight of the Garter*) has been conferred upon a COMMONER.

A L I S T  
OF THE  
CAPTAINS  
Of the BAND of  
GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS,  
From its *Establishment*,  
A. D. 1509\*.

K. HENRY VIII.  
HENRY (*Bourchier*) EARL of } See the preceding Memoir, p. 3.  
ESSEX—The First Captain.

\* The Dates, for the most part, refer to the times when the CAPTAINS are found in Office, and not to the precise year of their respective Appointments.

Sir ANTHONY BROWNE, *Knt.* } Memoir, p. 25.  
of the Garter.

WILLIAM (*Parr*) EARL of } Memoir, p. 26.  
Essex \*.

K. EDWARD VI.

WILLIAM (*Parr*) MARQUIS } Memoir, p. 30.  
of Northampton.

K. PHILIP and Q. MARY.

WILLIAM (*Parr*) MARQUIS } Memoir, p. 43.  
Northampton†.

THOMAS (*Ratcliffe*) EARL of } Memoir, p. 106.  
Sussex.

Q. ELIZABETH.

HENRY (*Cary*) LORD HUNS- } Memoir, p. 56.  
DON.

GEORGE (*Cary*) LORD HUNS- } Memoir, p. 61.  
DON.

K. JAMES I.

GEORGE (*Cary*) LORD HUNS- } Memoir, p. 49.  
DON.

HENRY (*Percy*) E. of Nor- } Memoir, p. 51.  
thumberland‡.

\* So created after the death of Henry Bouchier, the late Earl, whose sole daughter he had married. [Vid. Memoir, p. 26, in a Note.] His Lordship was created Marquis of Northampton, in the first year of King Edward VI. [Vid. Note to Page 31 of the Memoir.]

† Attainted, 1553.

‡ Deprived, 1606.

THOMAS (*Howard*) EARL of } MS. in Coll. Arm.  
SUFFOLK. [1615.]  
THEOPHILUS (*Howard*) LORD } MS. in the Library of the Earl  
WALDEN\*, [1616.] } of Shelburne.

K. CHARLES I.

THEOPHILUS (*Howard*) when } Memoir, p. 102.  
EARL of SUFFOLK.  
WILLIAM (*Cecil*) EARL of } Memoir, pp. 66, 67.  
SALISBURY.  
FRANCIS (*Leigh*) LORD DUNS- } Dugdale's Baronage.  
MORE [1643.†.]

K. CHARLES II.

HENRY (*Wentworth*) EARL } Memoir, p. 76.  
of CLEVELAND.  
JOHN (*Belafis*) LORD BEL- } Collins's Peerage.  
LASIS of Worlabby.  
THOMAS (*Belafis*) VISCOUNT } Dugdale's Baronage.  
FAUCONBERG [1672 †.]  
WENTWORTH (*Dillon*) EARL } Peerage of Ireland.  
of ROSCOMMON [1674.]  
ROBERT (*Leake*) EARL of } Collins's Peerage.  
SCARSDALE [1684.]

K. JAMES II.

THEOPHILUS (*Hastings*) EARL } Collins's Peerage.  
of HUNTINGDON [1687.]

\* He became Earl of Suffolk, 1626.

† Created Earl of Chichester, 1644.

‡ On the resignation of his Uncle Lord Belafis of Worlabby. [Dugdale and Coll.  
Hist.]

K. WILL-

[ 112 ]

K. WILLIAM III.

JOHN (*Lovelace*) LORD LOVE- } Memoir, p. 79.  
LACE \*.

RALPH (*Montagu*) EARL of } Q?  
MONTAGU.

CHARLES (*Fitzroy*) DUKE of } Memoir, p. 88.  
ST. ALBANS [1695].

Q. ANNE.

HENRY (*Somerſet*) DUKE of } Collins's Peerage.  
BEAUFORT, [1710.]

K. GEORGE I.

CHARLES (*Fitzroy*) DUKE of } Collins's Peerage.  
ST. ALBANS, [reſtored 1714 †.]

WILLIAM [*Cavendiſh*] MAR- } Collins's Peerage.  
QUIS of HARTINGTON [1726 †.]

K. GEORGE II.

RICHARD (*Boyle*) EARL of } Collins's Peerage.  
BURLINGTON, [1731.]

JOHN (*Montagu*) DUKE of } Memoir, p. 91.  
MONTAGU, [1734.]

CHARLES (*Paulet*) DUKE of } Collins's Peerage.  
BOLTON, [1740.]

\* His Lordſhip died in the command, 1693. [Collins's Peerage.]

† His Grace died in the Command, 1726. [Collins's Peerage.]

‡ His Lordſhip became Duke of Devonſhire, 1729.

ALLEN (*Bathurst*) LORD BA- } Collins's Peerage.  
 THURST, [1742 \*.]  
 JOHN (*Hobart*) LORD HOBART, } Collins's Peerage.  
 [1745 †.]  
 JOHN (*Berkeley*) LORD BER- } Collins's Peerage.  
 KELEY, of STRATTON [1756 †.]

### K. GEORGE III.

GEORGE-HENRY (*Lee*) EARL  
 of LICHFIELD, [1762 ||.]

GEORGE (*Edgumbe*) LORD  
 EDGE-CUMBE, [1772 §.]

GEORGE (*Townshend*) LORD  
 DE FERRARS, Mar. 29, [1782 \*\*.]

GEORGE-BUSBY (*Villiers*) E.  
 of JERSEY, [May 14, 1783.]

GEORGE (*Townshend*) LORD DE  
 FERRARS, [Dec. 31, 1783 ††.]

now

EARL of LEICESTER, ††.

\* Created *Earl Bathurst*, 1772.

† Created *Earl of Buckinghamshire*, 1749.

‡ His *Lordship* resigned, 1763.

|| His *Lordship* died in the Command, 1772.

§ Created *Viscount Mount-Edgumbe and Valletort*, 1781.

\*\* His *Lordship* resigned the Command, 1783.

†† Re-appointed on the resignation of the *Earl of Jersey*.

‡‡ By Patent of Creation, 1784.

It is rather singular, as an observation of the moment, that the Earl of Leicester, the *present* CAPTAIN, is, as Baron Bouchier and Louvaine, the lineal Heir and Representative of the Family of Henry Bouchier, Earl of Essex, the *first* CAPTAIN of the BAND.

A P P E N D I X. N<sup>o</sup>. II.

SINCE the foregoing sheets were printed off, I have been favoured with the use of an old Order-Book belonging to the Band which contains some Circumstances that were hitherto unknown to me, and which otherwise would have been interwoven in their proper places. The most material matter before me is a Copy of the Orders of K. James II. which differ very widely from those either of K. Charles I. or K. Charles II. We shall there find each GENTLEMAN PENSIONER again obliged to the finding of *Three* Great Horses for himself and *Two* servants, with Arms and other military Habiliments. We there likewise meet with *Eighty* GENTLEMEN AT ARMS, or PENSIONERS *Extraordinary*, each of whom was to provide *One* Great Horse and proper Accoutrements. These Orders varying so much from any that have preceded, I here insert a Copy of them, omitting such Articles as are in words or substance the same as those of the Reign of King Charles I. given in the Memoir, p. 69.

## ORDERS of KING JAMES II. A. D. 1684.

I. *The Honourable Band of our Gentlemen Pensioners having the Honour to have daily access into our Presence Chamber as being our nearest Guard and principal military Corps of our Household—in which honourable Band our Royal Father in his late Civil Wars, as well as other Princes our Predecessors, having found great service as well in the guard of their Royal Persons as that it hath served them as a Nursery to breed up the Nobility and Gentry of the Realm in military Discipline, and fit them to be Commanders in their Wars—*  
and

*and We having taken notice that several Persons have been admitted into the said Band not qualified as heretofore for that service, which has rendered the said Band less grateful to Us; We think fit and ordain—THAT henceforth none shall be admitted to be of the Forty Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary but the Sons of Noblemen or Gentlemen of Blood, or such Persons who by their valour and good conduct in the wars have distinguished themselves as Commissioned Officers in our forces, and who shall, for the term of six Months at the least, have served at their own proper charge as Gentlemen at Arms, commonly called Gentlemen Pensioners Extraordinary of the said Band.*

*2. None that is or shall be a Servant, or retained to any Person or Persons of any degree or condition whatsoever by Oath, Livery, Badge, Promise, or otherwise, but to Us only, shall be of the Forty Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary, or of the Eighty Gentlemen at Arms or Pensioners Extraordinary of the said Band.*

*3. If We or the Captain of the said BAND shall think fit to remove any or all of the Forty Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary now of the Band, those who have bought their Places, that shall be so removed, shall receive Half-pay during their lives respectively; and those that succeed in their places the other Half: and after their death the Whole.*

*4. The Captain of the Band shall have freedom and power of disposing of the places of all the Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary and of all the Gentlemen Pensioners Extraordinary which shall at any time become vacant in as full and ample a manner as any Captain of the Band have enjoyed and practised the same before the last Establishment in the year 1670—The said Establishment or any thing therein contained to the contrary notwithstanding.*

*5. The same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.*

*6. The same &c.*

*7. The same &c.*

8. *The same &c.*

9. . . . . *And every Gentleman Pensioner Extraordinary so failing shall, for the first default, be obliged to perform double Duty; and for the second default to perform triple Duty; and for the third default to be clearly expelled and put out of the Room of a Gentleman Pensioner Extraordinary.*

10. *The same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.*

11. *The said Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary being required by their Institution every of them to be well and sufficiently provided and furnished with his Three Great Horses for himself and his Servants, with Arms and all other Habiliments to the same appertaining, the performance whereof our late Brother, King Charles the Second, was pleased to dispense with till he should think fit to require the same,—It is OUR PLEASURE that from henceforth the Forty Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary, and the Eighty Gentlemen Pensioners Extraordinary, shall each of them be sufficiently furnished and provided with one Great Horse, with a Case of Pistols, a Broad Sword, an Iron Back, Breast, and Head-piece, with proper Furniture and Accoutrements to the same appertaining, to be ready therewith within two days Warning to be given them by their Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer, on failure whereof the Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary to forfeit Ten days Wages for the first default, and for the second default to forfeit a Month's Wages, and for the third default to be clearly expelled and put out of the Room of a Gentleman Pensioner in Ordinary, and to lose his whole Quarter's Wages. And every Gentleman Pensioner Extraordinary who shall fail to be furnished and provided with Horse and Arms as aforesaid, and to be ready therewith within Two Days notice to be given him by his Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer, shall be clearly expelled and put out of the room of a Gentleman Pensioner Extraordinary.*

12. *Every*

12. Every Gentleman Pensioner in Ordinary shall also sufficiently furnish and provide himself with three Great Horses, with Pistols, Swords, Iron Backs, Breasts, and Head-pieces, with proper Furniture and Accoutrements to the same appertaining, for himself and two servants, whenever We shall think fit to require the same, to be ready therewith within fourteen days notice to be given unto them by their Captain, Lieutenant, or Standard-bearer, under the penalty for every default to be chequed or expelled clearly, and put out of the room of a Gentleman Pensioner, as aforementioned.

13. The same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.

14. In substance the same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.

15. The Captain of the Band shall have a due regard that such Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary, and Gentlemen Pensioners Extraordinary, whom he shall appoint to do the duty of Corporals, Sub-Corporals, File-leaders, and Adjutants to the Band, shall henceforth always be such of the Gentlemen as shall have the most knowledge and experience in military discipline, without having regard to their seniority of admission into the Band.

16. The Habits, Arms, and Cloathing of the Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary, and of the Gentlemen at Arms or Pensioners Extraordinary, shall be such as We or their Captain shall appoint.

17. The same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.

18. The Trumpeters of Our Household attending on the said Band when they are under Arms, shall, on every such attendance, henceforth be mounted upon white Horses.

19. The accustomed Oaths shall be taken by every Gentleman Pensioner in Ordinary and by every Gentleman at Arms or Pensioner Extraordinary, at their Admission into the Band.

20. The same as in the Orders of K. Charles I.

21. *The Gentlemen Pensioners in Ordinary, and the Gentlemen at Arms, or Pensioners Extraordinary of the said Band, shall be advanced to be Commissioned Officers in our Army, preferably to all other persons whatsoever.*

*Given at our Court at Whitehall, the Tenth Day of February, 1684, in first Year of Our Reign.*

*By his MAJESTY's Command.*

---

# A P P E N D I X. N<sup>o</sup>. III.

## ADDITIONS and CORRECTIONS.

MEMOIR. p. 57.

[In the Note.]

———“ *This letter is printed in Dr. Chamberlayne’s Present States, viz. 1737 and 1748; but I have never been able to find the Original or any other Copy of it.*”

In the old Order-Book (mentioned in the Appendix, No. I.) there is a transcript of the letter above-given; but it is not there said from whence it was taken.

MEMOIR. p. 76.

———“ *The BAND was reduced from Fifty to Forty. This Dr. Chamberlayne tells us took place between the years 1672 and 1674.*”

The point in question is ascertained by the following extract from a Declaration of K. Charles II. which issued in the year 1670\*.

“ CHARLES R.

“ WE having taken notice that some Gentlemen of *our* BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS have been admitted into the said BAND, not qualified as heretofore for that service, which hath rendered the said BAND less grateful to Us;—for the pre-

\* Old Order-Book.

“ vention

“ vention of the same for the time to come, We do hereby declare, that the said BAND of PENSIONERS now consisting of *Fifty* shall be reduced to *Forty* that shall be continued. And if We shall think fit to remove any or all of those *Forty* that shall be continued, those that shall be so removed shall receive *Half-pay* during their lives respectively, and those that shall succeed in their places the other *Half*, and after their deaths the *Whole*.”

It should be observed here, in justice to the Crown, that the *Ten* GENTLEMEN, then discharged, were not totally neglected; for though the KING, when this reduction was made in the number of the *Band*, had enlarged the Pay of all the Officers respectively, and had advanced that of each of the *Forty* GENTLEMEN, to 100*l.* per annum: yet his Majesty, not to dismiss the *Ten* GENTLEMEN too unhandfomely (who, we may equitably suppose, did not purchase their places) was pleased to assign to each of them a sum of money, equal to the pay of a year and an half, to be levied upon the standing Corps. The above-cited Declaration thereupon runs thus—“ That for the satisfaction of the *Ten* [Gentlemen] who quite leave the *Band*, the remaining *Forty*, and the *Officers*, shall contribute out of their first year’s Wages, which shall be paid according to this new Establishment, the sum of 1,500*l.*---and that We will order the payment of their Arrears in the first place.

“ Given under our Signet and Sign Manual, at our Court  
“ at Whitehall, the 17th day of March, 1670.

“ By his MAJESTY’s Command,

“ ARLINGTON.”

MEMOIR.

## MEMOIR. p. 77.

———“ *If Dr. Chamberlayne’s account be the truth (and there is no reason to controvert it) the Salaries both of the Officers and Gentlemen arose to the present Standard, under K. JAMES [the Second.]*”

I thought that Dr. Chamberlayne might have been relied upon in a circumstance wherein he had an opportunity of receiving personal information, and in a case which lay peculiarly within the province of a man who professedly undertook to give the state of the Court, and its revolutions, from time to time. When a body of Gentlemen, so well known, and in so respectable a line of character, underwent a change, in number as well as salary, it became almost a matter of publick observation, and, I presume, did not escape the notice, if it did not incur the censure, of the world: but Dr. Chamberlayne has wandered so far from the truth that the event took place two years, at least, before he heard of it\*. Let us revert to the Declaration of K. Charles II. (1670) before cited, and we shall there find that the reduction of the *Band* in point of number, and the advancement of the Salaries, was the operation of the same moment, and that the latter was the result of the former. *Ten GENTLEMEN* of the *Band* had been discharged, and the King was thereby enabled, by such reduction, to enlarge the Pay of those *Gentlemen* who remained, as well as of the *Officers*. Thus the Declaration (of the year 1670) specifies that from thenceforth the several Wages of the *Band* should be as follows, viz. to the CAPTAIN 1,000*l.*---To the *Lieutenant* 500*l.*---To the *Standard-Bearer* 310*l.*---To the *Forty Gentlemen* (in the gross) 4,000*l.*---

\* See his Present-State of the Year 1672, where the *GENTLEMEN* are given, by name, *Fifty* in number.

To the *Clerk of the Cheque*, 120*l.*---and to the *Gentleman-Har-binger*, 70*l.* per annum. The Royal intention (as appears from another Clause in the above Declaration) was to equalize the Pay of the *Officers* of the *Band of Pensioners* with that of the corresponding *Officers* in the *Corps* of the *Yeomen of the Guard*, without enlarging the current expence allotted to the *Band*; for the words run, that the Wages of the *Officers* should “be made  
“equal to the Pay of the *Officers* of the *Yeomen of our Guard*,  
“which WE will shall be done without increasing the annual  
“Charge of *Six Thousand Pounds*, which is the ancient Wages  
“and Establishment of the whole *BAND* \*.”

MEMOIR. p. 95.

[ In the Note. ]

——“He adds [*Chamberlayne*] that none shall be admitted into  
“the *Band* except they shall have served at their own Charge, for  
“six months at least, as *Gentlemen at Arms*, or *Pensioners Extra-*  
“ordinary.----*This circumstance, for want of information, I leave*  
“doubtful.”

See the Orders of K. James II. (given in the Appendix, No. II. Art. 1.) where it is expressly said that none shall be admitted into the *Band* as *GENTLEMEN in Ordinary*, who have not  
“served for the term of six months at the least, at their own  
“Charge, as *GENTLEMEN AT ARMS*, commonly called, *GENT-*  
“*LEMEN PENSIONERS Extraordinary* of the *BAND*.” By the words “commonly called” one is induced to suppose that the *GENTLEMEN Extraordinary* were added by K. CHARLES II. though I have seen nothing to warrant it. K. JAMES II. if this addition was his own act, seems to have been very rapid in making the Appointment; for he ascended the Throne,

\* See the Memoir in a note to p. 64.

Feb. 6, 1684, N. S. and the Orders referred to are dated the 10th of that Month in the same Year. K. JAMES II. it is well known, was solicitous to have a very splendid Coronation, and such it was:---but the Ceremony was no sooner performed than the Household Establishment suffered a severe Reduction, and it is to be suspected, though the BAND of the *Forty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS in Ordinary* stood entire, that the *GENTLEMEN Extraordinary* might forsake their expectations, and withdraw themselves from a discouraging service, attended with actual and immediate Charges. The chance, humanly speaking, was unequal, the *Extra-GENTLEMEN* being *Eighty* in number, dependent for Preferment and Pay upon contingent Vacancies in a Body of *Forty* \*.

The *GENTLEMEN Extraordinary* do not appear, from Sandford's account of the Coronation of K. James II. to have made a part of the Procession, so that there is reason to doubt whether they even existed at the time of the Coronation, and might not all resign previous to that Ceremony, to avoid the necessary concomitant Expences †.

\* Orders of K. James II. Art. 11. See Appendix, No. II.

† The *Forty GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS in Ordinary*, who attended the Coronation, are mentioned by name in Sandford. *Twenty* escorted the KING, and *Twenty* the QUEEN, flanking the Canopies. The Coronation took place on the 23d of April after the Accession.

MEMOIR, p. 96.

——— “ *It has been customary for many Years past to purchase the Office or Place of a private Gentleman of the Band of Pensioners, and to sell the same (with the Approbation of the CAPTAIN) as occasion offered.*”

It is here implied, that in case of Death, the Disposition of the vacant Post is in the Breast of the CAPTAIN, and such it is known to be ; every Transfer, from one Man to another, being a Matter of Indulgence, which he is at liberty to grant or refuse at pleasure. As to the Patronage of the BAND, if I may so call it, of which, for want of Authority, I have hitherto suggested nothing, I have now a Sanction for adding what follows.

By the above-given Order, of the 18th of March, 1670, the KING resumes to himself the Appointment of the *whole* BAND, which previously had been lodged with the CAPTAIN : but in the Year 1677, a Declaration now before me (extracted from the old Order-Book) invests the then CAPTAIN (*the Earl of Roscommon*) with the like power as his Predecessors had, in cases of Vacancies by Death, before the Year 1670 ; with provision only that on every Change indiscriminately the *Gentlemen*, thenceforth intended for Admission into the BAND, should be first personally brought to the KING for his Approbation. This Power was again unreservedly conferred upon the CAPTAIN by the Orders of King James II. (Art. 4.) and, as far as my present Information goes, has never been revoked. It is farther established by the Case which came in Question between *Lord Lovelace* and some discarded *Gentlemen* at the *Revolution*, when the CAPTAIN's Power was confirmed by the KING and COUNCIL ; reserving  
 2 only,

only, in future, that every *Gentleman*, before his Admission, should be presented to his MAJESTY for his Concurrence \*.

MEMOIR, p. 99.

—— “ *The present UNIFORM is . . . . . entirely at the Pleasure of the CAPTAIN, with the KING’s Approbation.*”

The Orders of King James II. 1684 (Art. 16.) confirm this.

MEMOIR, p. 100.

—— “ *The CAPTAIN is sworn into his Post by the LORD CHAMBERLAIN, in person, by virtue of the KING’s Warrant.*”

In the above-mentioned old Order-Book there are some Minutes left by *Thomas Stapley, Esq;* who was *Clerk of the Cheque* to the BAND in the Reign of King CHARLES I. and dated 1633; wherein he says, that antecedent to that Reign the CAPTAIN of the BAND had not any *Oath of Office* administered to him: but that, after he was nominated by the KING, he took possession of the *Post* with a little Ceremonial, which at once notified the SOVEREIGN’s Pleasure, and carried Dignity with it in the Eyes of the Court and the Publick.

Mr. Stapley speaks in the third Person, and these are his Words, with which I shall close this long Detail.——“ The CAPTAIN of the BAND of GENTLEMEN PENSIONERS never used to take any *Oath*; for he [Stapley] knew *Five CAPTAINS* of the said BAND, viz. *Henry Lord Hunsdon—George Lord Hunsdon—The Earl of Northumberland—Thomas Earl of Suffolk—and Theophilus Lord Walden*; yet he never knew nor heard that any of the said CAPTAINS were sworn:——but their Manner was,

\* See the Memoir, p. 86.

“ when

“ when the QUEEN or KING gave any of them the Place of  
 “ CAPTAIN, to send for the *Clerk of the Cheque*, and call for a  
 “ *Roll*, and such of the BAND as were in *Quarter*, to acquaint  
 “ them with the KING’s Pleasure to make him CAPTAIN:—  
 “ *Whereupon*, the next Sunday following, such of the *Gen-*  
 “ *tlemen*, as were in Town, attended the CAPTAIN from his  
 “ Lodging to the *Presence-Chamber*, whereby Notice was taken,  
 “ that the KING had bestowed the Place of CAPTAIN upon  
 “ him.”

F I N I S.

















JUN 30 1952



BERGER

